

GAELIC WITHOUT A TEACHER

3/13
2/- NET.

MACLAREN'S

GAELIC
SELF-TAUGHT

AN
INTRODUCTION TO GAELIC
FOR BEGINNERS.

WITH EASY IMITATED PHONETIC PRONUNCIATION

THIRD EDITION—COMPLETELY REVISED

ALEXANDER MACLAREN & SONS,
360-362 ARGYLE STREET, GLASGOW.

GAELIC DICTIONARIES.

Macdonald's Gaelic Dictionary, revised edition, 3 vols., 42/- net (\$10 50), postage, British Isles, 1/3, Colonies, 2/-.

It is the only Dictionary in which are all the Gaelic words in the Dictionaries of Armstrong, Gaelic Society, MacAlpine, Macbain, MacEachen, MacLeod and Dewar, and works on Gaelic names, diseases, and herbs by Ferguson, Gillies, and Cameron, and many other words not contained in the foregoing.

Macdonald's New Illustrated Gaelic-English Dictionary is now the recognised authority on the language of the Gael. It contains over 80,000 words, the most complete yet issued, containing every word that is in all the other Gaelic Dictionaries and in Modern Gaelic Literature, and a vast number that have been specially collected and never in print before. Complete lists of names; personal, proper, geographical, beasts, birds, plants, mythological, technical terms, implements, etc. This work has been revised by all the best scholars of the day, and is the fruit of over 30 years' labour of the editor.

Macbain's Etymological Gaelic Dictionary, by the late Alex. Macbain, M.A., LL.D., new edition; edited by Malcolm Macfarlane, enlarged with the author's corrections and additions, cloth, 21/- (\$5.10). Postage—10d (20 cents).

The original edition was issued in 1895, and was sold out within fifteen months. This book puts on record nearly all the primary words of the language, giving their forms in old, early, and middle Gaelic, tracing them to their roots, and in most cases giving cognate words from other languages. Every word in the Gaelic language, with the exception of derivatives, is dealt with—Irish, Welsh, Cornish, and Breton; parallel words are given in every case where such exist. The word is then traced, where possible, to its Aryan root; and the cognate forms in other European languages, as well as in Sanskrit, are presented. Recent works on Celtic Philology, such as Henry's "Dictionary of Breton Etymology," have been carefully compared and examined; and numerous additions have been made to the 1900 purely Gaelic words of the first edition. Students of Gaelic cannot afford to be without a copy of Macbain's Dictionary.

Macfarlane's School Gaelic-English Dictionary. The scholars' friend in many ways, 7/6 net (\$1.85). Postage 6d.

The School Dictionary—a handy and cheap dictionary compiled and edited by Malcolm Macfarlane. Besides being a reference-book for the English meanings and for the inflections of words, much other useful and necessary information for the guidance of Gaelic writers is to be found in its pages, such as a table of words which are frequently spelt in a wrong way or at variance with the most advanced etymological knowledge; instructions to writers in preparing "copy" for the press and correcting printer's proofs; full tables of numerals; tables of the phases of the article, the pronouns and prepositional pronouns; personal names; punctuation, and the place of the hyphen at the ends of lines; together with an introduction.

Maceachan's Gaelic-English Dictionary, edited and enlarged by Dr. Macbain and John Whyte, 3/- (75 cents), postage 5d.

A handy cheap dictionary for school and ordinary purposes. The present edition contains over 11,000 words; its merits have been testified to and it has been warmly recommended by the Education Department.

A new edition of the above dictionary has long been overdue, and students and teachers of Gaelic will rejoice exceedingly in its appearance, revised and enlarged, in an attractive looking volume of nearly 500 pages—a marvel of cheapness in these days of high costs of production. It has been carefully and thoroughly revised by two highly competent Gaelic-speaking scholars under the general supervision of Dr. J. L. Robertson, C.B., who have added a very large number of literary words and eliminated what might be regarded as unimportant or irrelevant details. The dictionary in its present form is the most useful and accurate compendium current of the ordinary colloquial and literary vocabulary of the Gaelic language, and as such is eminently suited for the advanced classes in schools and for general use by intelligent students.

GAELIC SELF TAUGHT

AN INTRODUCTION TO GAELIC FOR BEGINNERS.

Complete in 1 Vol. 192 pages, 2/- net, postage 3d ex.

The aim of this handbook is to provide all who desire a practical knowledge of the Gaelic language with a simple and efficient means of acquiring it. The student will find that the phonetic pronunciation goes far to remove the difficulties encountered on his first introduction to the language, and greatly facilitates the labours of both teacher and pupil, while to those who cannot avail themselves of the aid of a teacher's voice it will prove an invaluable guide.

"The book is conceived on quite good lines, and would form a satisfactory introduction to such books as Norman MacLeod's re-arranged and enlarged edition of Reid's Elementary Course."—"An Deo Grèine."

"This aid to the elementary study of modern Gaelic, of which four parts are to hand, is the work of one who has gone through the experience of getting up the language from its very elements, and is specially intended for students to whom it is a foreign tongue. An important feature, therefore, is that it contains satisfactory guides for pronunciation, which is always a serious stumbling-block to beginners. In some cases, no doubt, the reproduction of genuine Gaelic sounds by English letters is in the strictest sense well-nigh impossible, and needs to be supplemented *VIVA VOCE*. On the whole, however, a very fair idea is given, and the work of the teacher is in the case of learners of the language very much simplified. There are useful explanations, throughout, of the peculiarities of Gaelic idiom as compared with English, and the little book may be strongly recommended for the use of learners of the language as, on the whole, conceived and executed on sound educational lines."—"Northern Chronicle."

It is without doubt the most concise and easily understood Gaelic Grammar yet published. There are many Gaelic Grammars, but they have all been constructed on archaic lines. Nothing could exceed the simplicity of the book; pronunciation of Gaelic seems hopeless to anyone who has not been born to it or conversed long with natives; but by this book, if by any, a rapid and intelligent acquaintance with the language can be made. Its graduated exercises, and its numerous examples make its most satisfactory features.

An Unsolicited Appreciation.—"It may not be amiss to say that the two elementary works of yours have made the initial stages of the study very easy for me. My Gaelic speaking friends here consider I am making very fair progress, and I hope to be able to read intelligently a considerable quantity of literature which has lain in the house (for obvious reasons) some thirty years untouched.—Yours faithfully, W.C."

The Gaelic Grammar is here set out in a progressive system that takes more account than usual of the special difficulties of the English-speaking beginner. The explanations are clear and adequate."—"Scotsman."

The work is intended to assist beginners, and has been constructed on lines of conspicuous simplicity. The service to learners of the Gaelic tongue and to teachers also—will be found of great value. From what we ourselves know of teaching the ancient language of the Gael we heartily approve of the author's method and system. The various lessons and exercises are judiciously and effectively graded, and the difficulties which invariably meet learners of Gaelic rendered easy by simple, helpful explanations and illustrations which go far to make the study of the language not a little attractive. Pronunciation and spelling are immensely simplified by the use of phonetic equivalents, in the construction of which the author has been very successful indeed. There is grammar throughout the little work too, but it is the natural grammar inherent in the language, and not the arbitrary, aggressive grammar of the schools. We heartily commend this excellent effort to all interested in acquiring an acquaintance with Gaelic by simple methods and in a short space of time.—"Highland News."

OUR REVISED
GAELIC BOOK CATALOGUE
IS ISSUED
AT INTERVALS AS REQUIRED

A Post Card will bring our Latest

ALEX. MACLAREN & SONS
GAELIC PUBLISHERS
360-362 ARGYLE ST. GLASGOW

SUAS LEIS A' GHÀIDHLIG

MACLAREN'S
GAELIC
SELF-TAUGHT

THIRD EDITION—COMPLETELY REVISED

GLASGOW :
ALEX. MACLAREN & SONS,
Gaelic Publishers, Printers, and Booksellers,
360-362 Argyle Street.

Key to MacLaren's Gaelic Self-Taught, with answers to examination questions, etc., price **1/6** (1/8 post free), from the publishers, ALEX. MACLAREN & SONS, 360 Argyle Street, Glasgow.

Paper made, printed, and bound in Scotland.



PREFACE.

IT was my original intention merely to correct and revise Mr. James White MacLean's "Introduction to Gaelic," but as the revision progressed I found that I was practically re-writing the whole work so that the portion of it I was leaving intact had also to be re-written, regraded and arranged to suit the revised matter. The volume I present to the student is therefore an entirely new work.

I have endeavoured to keep the phonetic sounds as simple as possible ; some of the finer ones may have been omitted, but these may be left to be acquired as the student progresses. I have considered it inadvisable to follow the pronunciation of any one district. Varying dialects will be found in Sutherland, Inverness, Lewis, Skye, Mull and Islay, and I have endeavoured to find a standard between them. On the whole a very fair idea of the pronunciation is given and the work of the teacher is thus in the case of learners of the language very much simplified. The various lessons and exercises are judiciously and effectively graded and the difficulties which invariably meet learners of Gaelic rendered easy by simple, helpful explanations and illustrations of the peculiarities of Gaelic idiom as compared with English, which should go far to make the study of the language not a little attractive.

A teacher who can speak the language should not confine himself to the lessons alone. He should introduce familiar objects by simple short questions and answers suggested by or containing some words in the lessons. Such phrases may be written on the blackboard to be copied by the pupils into their books. But to teach the pupil **to speak** should be the main object, as a living language is synonymous with a spoken language. Pronounce every word of Gaelic in the vocabularies, exercises, etc., and make the pupils in turn read out the Gaelic sentences. At the same time I have tried to make the lessons throughout as clear and as simple as possible, remembering that a large number of my readers will have no teacher. Beginners should be cautious of using some Gaelic words in any way outside their use as they occur in the lessons.

I have again avoided as far as possible the unnecessary use of the accent or duration mark and the apostrophe. In this I have followed the suggestions given from time to time by authorities on Gaelic. As instances where I consider it necessary to use an accent however, such words as **bata, bàta** ; **bas, bàs** ; **cas, càs**, could be given. I have retained the apostrophe in the negative **cha'n** ; but it, too, is being avoided more and more, and the form **chan** is getting generally adopted. Complete Gaelic-English and English-Gaelic vocabularies have been added to this edition.

In the preparation of this little book I have to acknowledge my indebtedness to each and all of our Gaelic grammars and grammarians ; all having contributed in some way, more or less ; in some cases by a suggestion and others by a quotation. I have also to acknowledge

much help received from the study of Irish grammars. In the revisal of manuscript and assistance in proof reading I am much indebted to one of our rising Gaelic writers, Mr. Hector Macdougall, without whose help, readily given, it is questionable if I would have attempted this volume. My acknowledgements are also due to Mr. John MacDonald, M.A., for some time teacher of Gaelic in Glasgow High School, for valuable help and assistance.

Suas leis a' Ghàidhlig.

JAMES MACLAREN.

ABBREVIATIONS.

Most of these, such as *adj.* for *adjective* are not given, as they cannot but be understood ; others are :—

d, dat.	dative.	m.	masculine.
f, fem.	feminine.	nm.	noun masculine.
g, gen.	genitive.	f, nf.	noun feminine.
cf.	compare.	n, nom.	nominative.

CONTENTS.

		Page
	Preface,	iii.
Lesson.	An Introduction to Gaelic,	1
I.	The Alphabet. Vowel and Consonant Sounds,	8
II.	Verb "to be" Present Independent Tense, tha ,	16
III.	Verb "to be" Present Dependent Tense, bheil ,	17
IV.	Verb "to be" Past Independent Tense, bha , ...	19
V.	Verb "to be" Past Dependent Tense, robh , ...	20
VI.	Verb "to be" Subjunctive Independent Tense, bhithinn ,	21
VII.	Verb "to be" Subjunctive Dependent Tense, bithinn ,	22
VIII.	Verb "to be" Future Independent Tense, bithidh ,	24
IX.	Verb "to be" Future Dependent and Relative, bithidh , bhitheas ,	25
X.	Verb "to be" Imperative, bitheam ,	26
XI.	Verb "to be" General Revisal,	28
XII.	Gaelic Idioms, "possession" with bi and aig , ...	29
XIII.	Gaelic Idioms, "to want" with bi and bho , ...	31
XIV.	Gaelic Idioms, "to know" with bi and aig , ...	33
XV.	Gaelic Idioms, "feeling" etc., with bi and air ,	35
XVI.	Gaelic Idioms, "existence" with bi and ann , ...	37
XVII.	The assertive verb is ,	39
XVIII.	Application of is and tha ,	43
XIX.	The verbs is and tha in question and answer, ...	45
	The verb is with the particle ann ,	46
XX.	Gaelic Idioms, "ownership" with is and le , ...	47
XXI.	Bi and the Compound Tenses of all the other verbs,	49
XXII.	The Definite Article,	53
XXIII.	The Noun. I., General Remarks and Rule,	59
XXIV.	The Noun. II., Particular Rules,	65
XXV.	The Noun. III., Particular Rules (polysyllables),	69
XXVI.	Government of Nouns, genitive, dative, compound,	73
XXVII.	The Adjective,	79
XXVIII.	The Adjective with definite article,	84
XXIX.	The Adjective with is and tha ,	86

XXX.	The Adjective in comparison,	88
XXXI.	Numeral Adjective,	92
XXXII.	Personal Pronoun,	99
XXXIII.	Prepositional Pronoun,	101
XXXIV.	Possessive Adjective or Pronoun,	103
XXXV.	Idioms with bi and prepositional possessive pronoun,	106
XXXVI.	Relative Pronoun,	109
XXXVII.	Interrogative Relative Pronouns,	113
XXXVIII.	Demonstrative Pronouns, etc.,	114
XXXIX.	Indefinite Pronouns, etc.,	116
XL.	The Verb. General Remarks and Particles, ...	118
XLI.	The Verb. The Past Tense,	124
XLII.	The Verb. Future Tense,	126
XLIII.	The Verb. Subjunctive,	129
XLIV.	The Verb. Imperative,	132
XLV.	The Participial Adj.,	133
	Paradigm of regular Verb,	135
XLVI.	Conversational Exercise. Questions and Answers, ...	136
	The Irregular Verbs. Synopsis of Tenses, ...	138
XLVII.	Irregular Verbs,	140
	Notes on Verbs; Irregular, Impersonal, etc.,	141
XLVIII.	Verbal Noun. Infinitive and Participle, ...	143
XLIX.	Synopsis of the tenses of a Gaelic Verb, ...	149
L.	Defective and other Verbs,	150
LI.	Preposition,	153
LII.	The Compound Preposition,	160
LIII.	Adverb,	161
LIV.	Conjunction,	165
	The Gaelic Language,	167
	How to learn to read Gaelic,	168
	A New Numeration,	169
	Synopsis of Aspiration,	170
	Vocabulary. Gaelic-English,	172
	Vocabulary. English-Gaelic,	179

Gaelic Self-Taught.

An Introduction to Gaelic.

1. The difficulties to be surmounted in studying and pronouncing the Gaelic are not at all so formidable or so numerous as they may at first sight appear to a person who is unacquainted with the structure of the language. The combination of vowels and quiescent consonants which present themselves in many words, impress the minds of individuals who have spent little or no time in examining the importance and nature of these combinations with the idea that the task of learning the language is impracticable. This is by no means the case, for it is quite easy by a little study and perseverance to acquire a good reading and speaking knowledge of this venerable old language.

2. The first thing that strikes us is the habitual use for the purposes of nominal and verbal flexions, of that modification of the internal vowel, traces of which we find in the English nouns "man, men," "mouse, mice," etc., and the causative verbs, "fell," "graze," and "glaze," from "fall," "grass," and "glass." In Gaelic this change appears most frequently in the cases of nouns where another vowel is inserted, and the flexion is made by changing the vowel into a diphthong or two vowels that flow so sweetly into one another as almost to become a diphthong. Thus in the numerous class of nouns the genitive singular and nominative plural are formed by changing **a** into **ai** as in **dan** "a song," **dain** "of a song," **dain** "songs"; so **brog** "a shoe" becomes in the genitive singular **broige**; **carn** "a heap" becomes **cuirn**; **long** "a ship," **luinge**; **fiadh** "a deer," **feidh**, etc. In a few cases contrariwise the

double-vowel or diphthong of the nominative singular becomes a single vowel in the genitive as in **ceann** "a head," **cinn**; **lion** "a net," **lin**; **athair** "a father," **athar**, etc. In the comparison of adjectives the same principle reigns—**ban** "fair," **baine** "fairer," etc.; and a considerable number of verbs change **ai** into **a**, **caidil** "sleep," **cadal**; **caill** "lose," **call**, etc.

3. But the most characteristic device for nominal and verbal flexion is what goes by the name of aspiration. This is simply a breathing represented by the letter **h**, which modifies the letter into a softer sound and sometimes smooths it away altogether. Thus **b** when aspirated becomes a **v**, the letter **s** when aspirated becomes obliterated altogether, and this obliteration is carried still further in the case of **f**, as in **fios**, where the addition of the **h** produces **fhios**, in which **fh** is silent, leaving **ios**, pronounced *eess*.

4. Until the student understands the application of Gaelic aspiration and inflexion, he cannot make use of any Gaelic vocabulary or dictionary. By rules simple and beautiful, the aspirate **h** is so managed as to silence or euphonise the consonants wherever their initial sound would injure the easy flow or graceful cadence of a word, a verse, or sentence. The knowledge of the power and proper use of the aspirate is therefore the most important requirement of the Gaelic student.

5. This aspiration or breathing sign **h** is not included as a letter in the Gaelic alphabet, and though the sound of **h** is common in Gaelic words, there is not a single word in the language which commences with it.

6. The application of **h** in Gaelic has the effect of aspiration as we know it in English, Latin, and Greek, when used as a prefix to a vowel. In this position it has the same sound as the English aspirate **h** in "hold" and "him." In Gaelic it is generally followed with a hyphen and written thus: **a h-uan** "her lamb."

7. For certain purposes the nine consonants **b c d f g m p t** and also **s** when preceding **l n r**, cease to have their ordinary sound and acquire a new sound or become

silent. To indicate this change an **h** is affixed to them, and they are then said to be aspirated, though it is only in some cases that this term "aspiration" is to be taken in its common meaning of "breathing," as in "house." The mere affixing of the **h** is called aspiration although some of the effects of the combination do not appear like what is usually associated with "breathing" (par. 36).

8. In modern Gaelic grammar aspiration denotes the change that an initial consonant may undergo in the various syntactical relations of the word. It is an adjunct and aid to inflexion; it is used to denote or help in denoting gender, number, case and tense. Thus in **bean mhath** "a good wife," where **math** appears as **mhath**, the aspiration shows that **bean** is feminine; in **cinn mhoir** it shows that **cinn** from **ceann** is genitive masculine; in **do'n cheann**, the aspirated **c** helps to mark the dative; and in **bhuail e** "he struck," the aspiration differentiates the past tense from the imperative or dependent future **buail**. In short, aspiration in Gaelic is a sign of prime importance.

9. Aspiration may take place at the beginning, middle, or end of a word. This change is caused either by the natural sound of the word in which any of these aspirated or mutable consonants enter, requiring it by their position in a sentence; by their relation or connection with other words which have an influence on their sound. When certain words precede, the following consonant must always be aspirated. The principle of this curious change is evidently euphonic, for it takes place principally after vowels and liquids. Etymology teaches us that when a consonant is aspirated the cause is generally traced to the fact that it is flanked on both sides by a vowel; that it has a vowel before and after it, the latter if final having dropped away in the course of time. Thus the Latin word **mater** "mother" is in Gaelic **mathair** pronounced *ma'ür*; the original hard **t** being softened away almost entirely by the aspiration.*

* In the modern language final vowels do not always cause aspiration. It will always puzzle a student to understand why **a** "his" should aspirate, while **a** "her" should not aspirate. The absence of the aspiration is a sign of gender. **a cheann** "his head"; **a ceann** "her head."

10. Two words closely connected syntactically become practically compound words and are so treated in Gaelic. Hence, if the first of such a couple of words ended in a vowel, the initial of the second, if aspirable, is aspirated. Thus : **mo thigh** signifies " my house " ; **mo** ends in a vowel, being in fact a genitive case ; pronounced rapidly with **tigh** the **t** of the latter became vowel-flanked and was worn away to the aspirate form, **th** being pronounced **h**. A great many feminine nouns in Gaelic belonged to the **a** declension which answers to the Latin first declension. These nouns ended in the vowel **a** ; now, if an adjective came to qualify such a noun, the two became a rough compound word, and the initial of the adjective being practically vowel-flanked suffered aspiration. Thus we have **bean mhath** for **bena matis** " a good wife." The genitive of nouns of the **o** declension (chiefly masculine) which answers to the Latin second declension, and the nominative plural also, ended in the vowel **i** ; hence the adjective is aspirated after these cases, and the final **i** is in this way remembered though it has disappeared long ere now. The dative of all nouns ended in a vowel ; accordingly the adjective after every dative singular is aspirated. Prepositions ending now or originally in a vowel aspirate the word they govern. Thus **do thigh** is for **do tegos** " to a house." The preposition **air** is now a decayed form descended from three original prepositions, these were **are**, **vor** and **iarn**, and only the first caused aspiration, the one which ended in a vowel. Hence arises the fact that **air** sometimes aspirates and sometimes does not. Thus we have **air chois** " afoot " parallel with **air cul** " behind." In the cases where the article causes aspiration this can also be traced to an original organic vowel ending which it had in these cases.

11. The use of the aspirated sounds of the consonants arose from the fact that, while in other languages inflexions of nouns, adjectives, pronouns, and verbs are made by terminal changes, Gaelic does not admit of many terminal changes, and thus some changes are made in the body of words and others at the beginning. In **mor** and **beag** the **m** and **b** have their normal sound, but the genitives of both

begin with the sound of **v** as if they had been spelled **vor** and **veag**. Spelling them thus would have made a radical change in the initial consonants and would have sadly destroyed the orthography of the language and rendered etymology difficult. By retaining the initial consonant unvaried and by indicating the change to its second sound by the application of the **h**, Scots Gaelic has preserved its orthography. Compare the effect of the mutation of the consonant in Welsh by departing from this system. In Welsh the radical initial is changed so considerably and so often, that it is hardly recognised as the same word.

SCOTS GAELIC.	WELSH.	ENGLISH.
ceann	pen	<i>a head</i>
do cheann	dy ben	<i>thy head</i>
mo cheann	fy mhen	<i>my head</i>
a ceann	ei phen	<i>her head</i>
caraid	cyfaill	<i>a friend</i>
do charaid	dy gyfaill	<i>thy friend</i>
mo charaid	fy nghyfaill	<i>my friend</i>
a caraid	ei chyfaill	<i>her friend</i>

12. But the great difficulty in Gaelic with most people lies in the pronunciation. Here the main thing to be noted is that as in our English words "though," "plough," etc., the final consonant having first been aspirated at last falls off altogether, similarly as a general rule does final **gh** and **dh** in Gaelic. In learning to read and speak Gaelic we require to acquire the habit of softening or slurring an aspirated consonant, as we do in the English words "might," "light," "fight"; merely extend this to a larger family and the speaking of Gaelic becomes easy. Thus in the middle of **saoghal** and **sabhal** the two medial consonants are omitted and the spoken letters remain **saol** and **sawl**; and in the same way **b m g c** at the commencement of a word are softened into **bh mh gh** and **ch**, whose pronunciation is as uniform to the ear as to the eye.

13. Gaelic is a soft vocalic and mellifluous language, in which harsh and hard sounds are avoided, softened, or assimilated. This general assimilation is a mutual smoothing down not only of an initial consonant, but also of the terminal consonant of the preceding word. It will be observed, for instance, that when the noun after the article

is aspirated, the article itself loses the final **n**; the second word influencing the first as much as the first influences the second; a mutual accommodation which is not found necessary when the article is followed by a dental, as it is a sound more easy of approach from the final **n**. Initial labials again, when not aspirated, change the **n** of the article to **m** for the same reason. This process of assimilating one word with another is an important one in Gaelic pronunciation. Similarly with vowels, an unstressed final vowel is elided before a stressed initial vowel in a word following, as: **m'athair** for **mo athair**, **d'iarr** for **dò iarr**, **b'fhearr** for **bu fhearr**, 'nan for **ann an**, 'san for **anns an**, **gu'n d'fhalbh** for **gu an do fhalbh**, **leam** for **le mi**, **gill' og** for **gille og**.

14. Eclipsis is also a form of assimilation, an expedient governing euphony and facility of utterance, an effort at economy* in articulation, consisting of the suppression under certain circumstances of the sound of an initial mutable consonant for that of a cognate or homo-organic letter which, though not shown in the written language, is nevertheless a not uncommon feature in the spoken language in some districts of Scotland.

Instances of eclipsis as it is heard in some districts:—

b by m —	orain nam beann	(<i>orain na meann</i>)
	mullach nam beann	(<i>mullach na meann</i>)
d by n —	moch an de	(<i>moch ün-ā</i>)
	an do ghabh thu e ?	(<i>na ghav oo ā</i>)
	ar Dia	(<i>ur nea</i>)
t by d —	gu'n d' thainig thu	(<i>gun danik oo</i>)
	ar tir	(<i>ar deer</i>)
c by g —	an cu, nan con,	(<i>ungcu, nungon</i>)
	an ceart uair	(<i>un gerst oor</i>)
s by t —	an t-slat	(<i>un illatt</i>)
f by bh —	am bheil (bhfeil)	(<i>um vāl</i>)
	a bhos (a bhfos)	(<i>ū vos</i>)

15. The consonants are twelve in number, and these have almost unvarying sounds, determined by their proximity to either broad or small vowels, or to the aspirate **h**. Let the sound of these letters be once learned and their place in the syllable observed, their pronunciation will not present difficulty to any student. The chief difficulty

* Often a laziness in the vocal organs not to be encouraged: cf. "in a nour" for "in an hour" in English,

found is the difference in sound values certain letters have from their English sound. The sounds approximate more nearly their continental sound values. In the same way vowel sounds are still more simple.

16. As will be seen, our scheme of pronunciation is a simple one and does not attempt the extreme niceties of phonological exactitude which are the aim of more elaborate schemes, but its simplicity will be found of considerable advantage. A simplified scheme involves of course some amount of compromise; to express a greater number of vowel sounds than those indicated would have obliged the reader to refer continually to an intricate table of diacritic marks* which would have reduced its general utility. In the table the sounds chosen are standard and common to the English language, and are to be found in any dictionary. Previous gleaners in the field of Gaelic phonetics gave many localisms† as a guide to pronunciation, but as the readers of this little grammar will be scattered world-wide it is useless for us to follow suit. We have endeavoured to give some idea of the Gaelic sounds in the language which the student speaks, instead of invoking the aid of some unknown foreign tongue. A Gaelic sound can only be imitated perfectly in English if that sound occurs in English, and it stands to reason that sounds which never occur in English can only approximately be rendered in English syllables. We have many sounds peculiar to Gaelic, and it has to be

* How many of our readers can speak and pronounce Greek. Yet we are told in many Gaelic grammars that " **ch** broad," is to be pronounced as a certain Greek letter is in Scotland, and that " **ch** small," is to have the pronunciation it gets in England; another gives " **ch** as in German "; then we find that a certain **a** is to have the pronunciation of " **a** in ' that ' as pronounced by a lowlander but not as by an Englishman." Helps like these convey nothing to me, far less will they help a man in London, Vancouver, or Melbourne.

† Compare some of M'Alpine's phonetic spellings; these three chosen at random look worse than the original Gaelic. **innean** (²*ēnn''-āēn'*); **meadhon oidhche** (*mén'-ūy²-chyä*); **buaidh** (*būāē'-gh'*) with the same under a more simplified scheme (*leen-yūn*); (*meeūn-ōich-ū*) and (*boo-y*). Some of M'Alpine's English key words, too, are based on a purely local pronunciation, and not as generally accepted.

admitted that a number of these can be acquired more accurately if heard *viva-voce*. Our imitated pronunciation is intended for self-taught students only, but with it a certain steady progress is sure to be made. The student will then be able to approach some Gaelic-speaking Highlander for further aid—there is no outpost of empire but where he will be found. A summer holiday spent in one of our Gaelic-speaking districts would be very helpful after a course such as outlined in this little work.

LESSON I.

THE GAELIC ALPHABET.

17. In the Gaelic alphabet there are eighteen characters of which five are vowels, **a o u e i**; and twelve are consonants **b c d f g l m n p r s t**; and the breathing or aspirate **h**.

18. The vowels are divided into broad and small—

Broad : **a o u**; Small or narrow : **e i**.

19. The consonants may be classified according to the organs of speech by which they are sounded.

Palatals : **c g** Linguals : **l n r**

Labials : **b f m p** Sibilant : **s**

Dentals : **d t**

20. Certain of the consonants have a second sound, caused by aspiration. **h** is the mark of aspiration.

Plain,	b	c	d	f	g	l	m	n	p	r	s	t
Aspir.	bh	ch	dh	fh	gh	—	mh	—	ph	—	sh	th
Sound,	<i>v</i>	<i>ch</i>	<i>ugh*</i>	—	<i>ugh*</i>	—	<i>v</i>	—	<i>f</i>	—	<i>h</i>	<i>h</i>

21. Note **l n r** and **s** when followed by **g m p t** do not have an aspirated form shown in writing or print, but where the other consonants aspirate these also have a slightly aspirated sound.

22. There are two accents : the grave and the acute. Either of these indicates a long vowel with a special sound.

* Sound of **dh** and **gh** : page 13; pars. 40-41, page 15.

We use them in this little work sparingly, chiefly where they are necessary to distinguish between words that are the same in spelling but have different meanings. **bàta** "a boat," **bata** "a stick."

23. Two or three vowels coming together with the sound of one passing into the other are called diphthongs and and triphthongs.

Diphthongs : **ai, ao ; ea, ei, eo, eu ; ia, io, iu ; oi, ua, ui.**

Triphthongs : **aoi, eoi, iai, iui, uai.**

24. The use of the letter **i** in some of the diphthongs and triphthongs is to qualify the sound of the consonant which follows it, and has no distinct sound of itself. **Ao, eu,** though classed among the diphthongs have but one simple sound which is always long.

THE VOWEL SOUNDS.

25. The Gaelic vowels sound very similar to the Continental vowels, as follows :—

A (*ah*) ; **E** (*ay*) ; **I** (*ee*) ; **O** (*oh*) ; **U** (*oo*).

Each vowel has a long and a short sound, especially when the quantity of the vowel may determine the meaning of the word. In contact with **m, mh,** or **n,** vowels become nasalised.

26. Key to the phonetic vowel sounds.

	English.		Gaelic Examples.
â represents a	in " far " (<i>fâr</i>) ;		bàs (<i>bás</i>) death.
a „ a „	" fat " (<i>fat</i>) ;		cail (<i>kál</i>) vigour.
ā „ a „	" fate " (<i>fāl</i>) ;		bas (<i>bas</i>) a palm.
au „ au „	" Paul "		fan (<i>fan</i>) stay.
e „ e „	" met "		bheil (<i>vāl</i>) am.
ee „ ee „	" tree "		aige (<i>ākū</i>) at him.
			anns (<i>auns</i>) in.
			corr (<i>kaur</i>) odd.
			lean (<i>len</i>) follow.
			le with.
			tri (<i>tree</i>) three.
			cir (<i>keer</i>) comb.

y represents ee in "feet" (<i>fyt</i>)	min (<i>myn</i>) meal.
o „ o „ "hot"	smig (<i>smyk</i>) chin.
ō „ o „ "more" (<i>mōr</i>);	ploc (<i>plochk</i>) turf.
oo „ oo „ "moor"	mor (<i>mōr</i>) big.
ow „ ow „ "town"	tom (<i>tom</i>) a hillock
ü „ u „ "lut" (<i>büt</i>);	cu (<i>koo</i>) a dog.
ö „ o „ "word" (<i>Irish</i>);*	cur (<i>koor</i>) putting.
nn „ ni „ "onion"	toll (<i>towlt</i>) hole.
	fonn (<i>fownn</i>) a tune
	goil (<i>güil</i>) boil.
	a (<i>üh</i>) his, who.
	gun (<i>gün</i>) without
	laoch (<i>llöch</i>).
	binn (<i>bynn</i>) sweet
	seinn (<i>shāynn</i>)

singing

27. A vowel may be obscure, that is it may have a shorter sound than an ordinary short vowel. In English we have the **a** in "pillar," the **o** and **e** in "cover," the **i** in "cousin," the **u** in "fur," as obscure sounds which sound very much alike. In Gaelic these vowels have also an obscure sound like this. They will be shown in the pronunciation with two dots over them thus *ü*.

28. The following are examples of this obscure vowel sound:—

a and **e** final: **aba** (*abü*); **feile** (*fälü*); **lugha** (*llüghü*).

a and **ea** short before **dh**, **gh**, and unaccented **ch**:

cogadh (*kokügh*); **ordugh** (*ortügh*); **ciontach** (*kyn-tüch*).

a and **u** in the article and in most of the particles:

am faigheadh (*üm fayügh*); **ag radh** (*üg ra*).

gun (*gün*); **lamhan** (*llavün*); **dh'iarr** (*yee-ür*).

ai and **oi** before the linguals **l**, **n**, **r**:

tairbhe (*türvü*); **piobair** (*pēpür*).

A correspondent vowel sound: **airm** (*ürüm*); **earb** (*arüp*).

The plural termination of nouns: **lamhan** (*llavün*); **faidhean** (*fáy-ün*).

* This **ö** (=ao) is an obscure sound rather longer than the very short obscure **u**. It is a sound not heard in English. It is similar to **œu** in French **sœur** (*sör*); German modified **ö** in **Söhne** (*sö-nü*); **o** as pronounced by an Irishman in **word**; or as we hear **bird** sometimes sounded in English (*börd*).

29. SOUNDS OF THE PRINCIPAL DIPHTHONGS.

ai, eu, ei, like **ā** in "fate"; **air** (*ār*); **spour** (*spār*); **fein** (*fān*).*
ea, like **ā** in "fate"; **dean** (*jān*); sometimes **yā**, **neamh** (*nyāv*).
ea, sometimes **yā**; **eala** (*yāllū*); **fearr** (*fyār*).

ea, ei, sometimes like **e** in "met"; **leat** (*let*); **geir** (*ger*);
io, ia; long **i** (o and a almost silent); **piob** (*peep*); **cian**
(*keen*); **ciall** (*keeül*); **fios** (*fæss*).

ua, uai, ui; long **u** like **oo** in "moor"; the other vowels
almost complementary; **luath** (*looüh*); **fuaim** (*foym*)
cuin (*koon*); **luib** (*lloyp*); **cluas** (*kloous*).

eo, iu; the initial vowels very short; **deoch** (*joch*); **ciurr**
(*kewr*); **fliuch** (*floo:h*).

ao; obscure **a**, silent **o**; **naomh** (*növ*); **taobh** (*töv*); **caol**
(*köll*); **maor** (*mör*); **gaoth** (*gö*).

oi; as **oi** in "boil"; **oidhche** (*oichü*); **coilltean** (*koil-chün*).

30. SOUNDS OF THE TRIPHTHONGS.

aoi, as **caoidh** (*koo-y*) lament.

laoigh (*lloo-y*) calves.

eoï, as **treoir** (*treo-yr*) strength.

geoidh (*keeo-y*) geese.

iai, as **ciaire** (*kee-ar-ü*) darker.

fiaire (*fee-ar-ü*) more crooked.

iui, as **ciuin** (*kee-oon*) meek.

fliuiche (*floo:h-ü*) wetter.

uai, as **fuaim** (*fooü-ym*) sound.

cruaidh (*krooü-y*) hard.

31. A vowel is never doubled in the same syllable of a Gaelic word like **ee** or **oo** in English, and there is no silent final vowels like English **e** in "where" (*whār*); "came" (*kām*)*; "give" (*giv*).

32. When two vowels belonging to two different syllables of the same word come in contact with each other, the common practice is to separate them by inserting a pair of silent consonants between them, thus: **bi-th-eam** pronounced (*bee-üm*) let me be; **cnothan** (*kro-ün*) nuts.

* The vowel sound of **ā** in "fate" is a compound sound. In English we hear the same sound in the following combinations: they (*thā*); there (*thār*); gaol (*jāl*); clay (*clā*); rein (*rān*); rain (*rān*); reign (*rān*); pear (*pār*); pair (*pār*); pare (*pār*); eight (*āt*).

33. Vowel sounds coming together in this manner are regulated by a rule which is seldom broken. The rule is

Leathan ri leathan, agus caol ri caol.

“Broad to broad, and small to small.”

34. In words of more than one syllable, the last vowel of the first syllable, and the first vowel of the next syllable must be of the same quality; *i.e.*, if the last vowel of a syllable be *broad*, the first vowel of the next syllable must be *broad* also; but if *small*, a *small* vowel follows.

35. In conformity with this rule, a broad or small vowel is introduced, as the case may be, although it serves no purpose in respect of derivation or pronunciation. Thus, **sùilean** is the plural of **sùil**: **an** is the plural termination, and the introduction of the **e** makes no difference in the sound, but is inserted in conformity with the above rule. Again, all regular verbs form their future by adding **idh** to the root. Take the verb **tog**, lift, add **idh** to form the future tense, and you get **togidh**, which is a breach of the rule, as the consonant **g** is preceded by the broad vowel **o**, and followed by the small vowel **i**; an **a** must be added to keep to the rule, and the correct spelling of the future form is **togaidh** (*ttog-y*).

36. SOUNDS OF THE CONSONANTS.

b **b** is like **b** in “boat” with an inclination to a **p** sound.

bh **bh** at the beginning and end of a word is like **v** in “vale.”

bha (*va*) was; **gabh** (*gav*) take; **siribh** (*shyryv*).

bh in the middle of a word is sometimes like **w** or **u**, but

it is generally silent: **leabhar** (*llyoür*) a book;

dubhar (*doo-ür*) shade; **gobhar** a goat, pronounced *gour*, hence **Ardgour**

c **c** always hard like **c** in “call” and **k** in “keep.” Never like **s**.

When final after vowels **a o u**, like **chk**: **mac** (*machk*) a son.

ch **ch** has no English sound equivalent, beside a broad vowel has a strong guttural sound as the Scots word “loch” (*lawch*) or in “clachan.” Beside a small vowel like the Scots “nicht” for “night” generally a **k** sound seems added.

- d** **d** before a small vowel, is a mixture of the **d** in "duke" and **j** in "Jew"; before a broad vowel, like **d** in "consider," or almost the same sound as **t**, only softer.
- d** terminal after **ch** :—**chd** ; like a **k**, **seachd** (*shachk*) seven.
- dh** **dh** followed by **a**, **o**, **u** is like **ghy**, it has a strong thick guttural explosive sound (see **gh**).
- dh** before a small vowel has a **y** sound : **Mo Dhia** (*mo yeeü*) my God ; in the middle and at the end of some words it is silent : **radh** (*ra*) saying ; **minidh** (*meen-y*) awl ; **fanaidh** (*fann-y*) will stay.
- f** **f** is the same as in English.
- fh** **fh** always silent **fhear** (*err*), **fhad** (*att*) ; except in the words **fhein**, **fhuair**, and **fthast**, which are pronounced *hān*, *hoo-ür* and *ha-üst* respectively.
- g** **g** before a broad vowel like **g** in "galley" : **gabh** (*gav*) take.
- g** before a small vowel like **g** in "gear" : **gile** (*geel-ü*).
- g** preceded by or between small vowels like a **k** or the hard **c** of "can" : **slige** (*slykü*).
- gh** **gh** before and after broad vowels like **ch** but more guttural, like **rg**h in "burgh" as sounded by one having a burr. An explosive guttural not heard in English (par. 40).
- gh** before a small vowel has the sound of **y** in English "yes" **gheibh** (*yöü*).
- gh** in the middle and at the end of a word has no power other than that of lengthening the sound of the preceding vowel, just as **gh** in English words "high" and "neighbour" and "thought," i.e., **ri**gh (*ree*) a king ; **dheighinn** (*yāynn*).
- h** in Gaelic **h** is the sign of aspiration only.
- l** **l** almost as in English.
- ll** **ll** final after **i** as in English "million."
- m** **m** as in English.
- mh** **mh** is always like a **v** with a nasal touch : **mharbh** (*varv*) killed ; **ramh** (*rav*) an oar.
- mh** in the middle of a word is generally silent, imparting a nasal sound to the preceding vowel : **comhradh** (*co-ra*) dialogue.

- n** **n** as in English.
- n** after **c g m t** sounds like **r** nasal : **cnap** (*krap*) ; **cno** (*kro*) a nut ; **gnuth** (*groo*) grim ; **mnaoi** (*mraoi*) of a woman.
- n** final before an initial **c** or **g** of a word following interpolates a nasal **g** sound : **an cu** (*ungkoo*) the dog ; **nan con** (*nüing kon*) of the dogs ; **'nan cadal** (*nang kat-tül*) in their sleep.
- nn** **nn** after **i** like the **ny** in "Bunyan" : **gn** in *sigñora*.
- p** **p** as in English.
- ph** **ph** always like **f** as in English : **phill** (*fyll*) returned.
- r** **r** as in English, though generally with more of a roll.
- rt** **rt** as **rsht** : **mart** (*marst*) a cow.
- s** **s** is always sounded like **sh** whenever it comes before or after the small vowels : **sinne** (*shynn-ü*) ; there is one exception to the rule, the assertive verb **is**, like **iss** in the word "hiss" and not **ish**.
- s** before or after the broad vowels is like **ss** in the word "pass," like **s** in "soon." The demonstrative pronouns are exceptions to this rule, **so** and **sud** being pronounced *show* and *shoot*.
- s** following **t-** of the definite article is completely eclipsed and lost in pronunciation. In this particular way **s** is unique, all other aspirable consonants are aspirated in this position : **an t-slat** (*un tllat*) the rod.
- sh** **s** when aspirated, **sh**, the **s** is completely eclipsed and is not sounded, the aspirate **h** alone being heard, like **h** in "has" ; **shin** (*heen*) stretched.
- t** **t** before broad vowels like **tt** in "matter" : **tog** (*ttok*) lift.
- t** preceding small vowels like **ch** in "cheer" : **tim** (*cheem*) time.
- th** **th** is like **h** in "him," the aspirate **h** eclipsing the consonant **t** : **thug** (*hook*) brought ; in the middle and end of a word it is generally silent : **sith** (*shee*) peace ; **leathan** (*llyā-ün*) broad.

37. The combination of lingual consonants with labials and also **g** and **ch** is noted in that they interpolate an added vowel sound between them and one generally correspondent to the preceding vowel. Thus, the combinations **lb**, **lch**, **lg**, **lm**, **lp**, and so on, interpolate this distinct drawl vowel between them. **falbh** (*faliiv*); **Alba** (*alabiü*); **tilg** (*tchy lyk*) etc. Similarly between the same groups of consonants when they come next each other in compound words, **ban-mhaighstir** (*banavāshtchyr*) (par. 19).

38. The dentals **d** and **t**, and also **s** when followed by **g t p m** (i.e., **sg**, **st**, **sp**, **sm**) are not aspirated when they follow other words ending in a dental or lingual, **an dorus**, the door.

39. Diminutives in **an** sound it *an*, but plurals in **a**, **an**, or **ean** sound *ü* and *ün*: **cnocan** (*krokan*) a little hillock; **dana** (*danü*) songs; **brogan** (*brogün*) shoes; **preasa** (*präs-sü*) bushes.

40. The broad sound of **dh gh**: it is not easy to learn this sound except by ear, but the following will be helpful in an endeavour to pronounce it. The **gh** in **ugh** is about the nearest we can get in English. This **dh** and **gh**—a highly explosive guttural—is produced by pressing the point of the tongue on the lower or upper gum and then forcing the breath against the roof of the mouth, without allowing the tongue to touch the back part of the mouth, or as if a short or inaudible **u** were sounded before the **dh** or **gh**. The sound of **g** in **auger** (a carpenter's tool) is also near our sound.

41. **y** final is used in the phonetics as representing the **y** sound heard final in "mighty" (*mit-y*); "gaudy" (*god-y*); "steady" (*sted-y*). Gaelic ex. **cuiridh** (*koor-y*); **dachaidh** (*tach-y*); **bithibh** (*bpeehyv*); **bithidh** (*bpeehy*).

42. In some of the phonetic key words it must be observed that the almost sameness of sound is all that is intended to be expressed, for the sound may be rather longer or rather shorter than that of the key word.

LESSON II.

VERB "TO BE"; PRESENT INDEPENDENT TENSE.

43. The Gaelic verb always precedes the noun or pronoun and is not declined, being the same for all persons and numbers.

tha mi (<i>ha mee</i>)	I am.	tha sinn (<i>ha sheen</i>)	we are.
tha thu (<i>ha oo</i>)	thou art.	tha sibh (<i>ha sheev</i>)	you are.
tha e (<i>ha ā</i>)	he is.	tha iad (<i>ha eeüt</i>)	they are.
tha i (<i>ha ee</i>)	she is.		

44. Memorise the following vocabulary :—

an la (<i>ün llá</i>)	the day.	deas (<i>jess</i>)	ready.
an duine (<i>ün doo-nü</i>)	the man.	an so (<i>ün sho</i>)	here.
an gille (<i>ün geel ü</i>)	the boy	an sin (<i>ün sheen</i>)	there.
luath (<i>llooü</i>)	swift, quick.	an sud (<i>ün shoott</i>)	yonder
fuair (<i>fooür</i>)	cold.	sgith (<i>skee</i>)	tired.
fliuch (<i>floooh</i>)	wet.	a nis (<i>ü nysh</i>)	now.
blath (<i>bpláh</i>)	warm.		

45. When we make a statement about the subject of the sentence, the predicative adjective or adverb comes last in the sentence as in English.

Tha an gille fliuch, the boy is wet.

46. Read in Gaelic and translate the following :—

1. Tha an la fuair.
2. Tha an duine fliuch.
3. Tha e an sin a nis.
4. Tha an gille an so.
5. Tha mi sgith.
6. Tha sinn deas.
7. Tha an la blath.
8. Tha e fliuch a nis.
9. Tha iad an sud.
10. Tha thu deas.
11. Tha an duine luath.
12. Tha an gille an sud.
13. Tha mi fuair.
14. Tha an duine deas a nis.
15. Tha an gille fliuch.
16. Tha sinn fuair.
17. Tha iad sgith.

47. Translate the following into Gaelic :—

1. The man is wet.
2. I am ready.
3. He is tired.
4. We are warm now.
5. They are wet.
6. You are tired.
7. She is here.
8. The boy is swift.
9. He is here now.
10. He is ready.
11. The day is wet.
12. The man is here.
13. The boy is tired.
14. They are there now.
15. They are cold.
16. He is ready now.
17. You are quick.
18. We are cold now.
19. The day is warm.

48. As **tha** "is" always precedes its nominative, **tha an la fuair** literally means "is the day cold" as if asking a question. This position of the verb need not lead to confusion as we never use **tha** in that way. The meaning of **tha** never varies, it is always the sign of an affirmative sentence, and in translation follows its nominative.

LESSON III.

49. VERB "TO BE"; PARADIGM OF THE PRESENT TENSE.

<i>Independent</i> tha (<i>ha</i>)	<i>Dependent</i> bheil (<i>vāl</i>)
tha mi (<i>ha mee</i>)	I am.
am bheil mi? (<i>üm vāl mee</i>)	am I?
cha 'n eil mi (<i>chan yāl mee</i>),	I am not.
nach eil mi? (<i>nach āl mee</i>)	am I not?
ma tha mi (<i>mü ha mee</i>)	if I am.
mur eil mi (<i>mür āl mee</i>)	if I am not.
ged a tha mi (<i>ket ü ha mee</i>)	though I am.
ged nach eil mi (<i>ket nach āl mee</i>)	though I am not.
gu 'm bheil mi (<i>küm vāl mee</i>)	that I am.
nach eil mi (<i>nach āl mee</i>)	that I am not.

50. As the verb is the same for each person in both numbers it is unnecessary to print the same words six times over. The learner has only to repeat the pronouns in their order after every temporal change of the verb.

51. It will be noticed that **nach** occurs twice with different meanings, but no ambiguity should occur, as, when it is the interrogative particle, it comes at the beginning of a sentence or clause, and when the relative negative it is in the middle and follows its antecedent.

52. "I am tired" simply is in Gaelic **tha mi sgith**; but "he says that I am tired—he is saying that I am tired" is rendered into Gaelic by **tha e ag radh gu'm bheil mi sgith**, it is not **tha e ag radh a tha mi sgith**. **Tha** is only used in the direct present to make a definite and independent statement about the subject and **bheil** is employed when the verbs "am, art, is, etc.," follow another verb upon which they are dependent, or when a question is asked or something is denied.

53. **Bheil** being the form used after the particles is always aspirated **am bheil mi sgith?** "am I tired?" **Cha'n eil** is used for **cha bheil**, **bh** is thrown out for euphony's sake and an organic **n** is retained between **cha** and **eil** to prevent a hiatus.

54. The sign of the participle is **ag**, which becomes **a'** before all consonants except **radh**. The participle follows the subject.

55. When we wish to answer "yes" or "no," we repeat the verb in the same tense as is used in the questioning sentence. The noun or pronoun is not required.

Am bheil an gille fliuch? *is the boy wet?*
Tha. Cha'n eil. *he is = yes. he is not = no.*

56. Memorise these vocabularies as we have not space to repeat previous lists.

mall (*maull*) slow.

crubach (*kroobüch*) lame.

dachaidh (*tach-y*) home.

a' dol (*ü dawl*) going.

a' tighinn (*ü cheeün*) coming.

ach (*äch*) but.

agus (*â-ghus*) and.

ag radh (*üg ra*) saying.

fathast (*jâhust*) yet.

do'n bhaile (*ton valü*) to the town.

an t-each (*ün tchyäch*) the horse.

og (*ogk*) young.

an diugh (*ün joo*) to-day.

57. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Am bheil an la fuar? 2. Cha'n eil an la fuar, tha e blath. 3. Ged a tha e blath tha e fliuch. 4. Tha an t-each crubach ma tha e mall. 5. Nach eil an duine an sin a nis? 6. Cha'n eil, tha e an so a nis. 7. Mur eil an gille fuar tha e fliuch. 8. Tha an gille an so an diugh. 9. Tha an gille sgith, ach cha'n eil e fuar. 10. Tha e ag radh gu'm bheil e og, ach tha mise ag radh nach eil e. 11. Am bheil thu 'dol dachaidh a nis? 12. Cha'n eil, tha mi a' dol do'n bhaile. 13. Am bheil iad a' dol do'n bhaile? Tha. 14. Tha i a' tighinn dachaidh a nis. 15. Nach eil an la blath? Tha.

58. Now translate into Gaelic :—

1. You are going to the town to-day. 2. Are you not ready yet? 3. No, he is ready, but I am not. 4. The horse is lame to-day. 5. It is not here yet. 6. The boy is young. 7. If the man is not wet he is cold. 8. The day is warm. 9. The horse is swift, but the dog is slow. 10. Is the man not coming home? 11. No, he is going to the town. 12. You are not coming to the town to-day. 13. The boy is cold and wet. 14. If the man is not there the boy is here. 15. Though the boy is not young. 16. If the horse is not tired it is lame. 17. She says (is saying) that the man is coming here, but they say (are saying) that he is not. 18. Are you not going home now?

LESSON IV.

59. VERB "TO BE"; PAST INDEPENDENT FORM.

bha mi (<i>va mee</i>)	I was.	bha sinn (<i>va sheen</i>)	we were.
bha thu (<i>va oo</i>)	thou wert.	bha sibh (<i>va sheev</i>)	you were.
bha e, i (<i>va ā, ee</i>)	he, she was.	bha iad (<i>va eeüt</i>)	they were.

60. For the English article "a" we have no equivalent in Gaelic. There is only one article in Gaelic—that which corresponds to the English "the"; as:—

Duine, *a man.*

An duine, *the man.*

61. **Tha** and **bha** before an indefinite noun can take the meaning in English of "there is," "there are," "there was," etc., as:—

Tha duine aig an dorus (<i>torus</i>)	<i>there is a man at the door.</i>
Cha 'n eil duine aig an dorus,	<i>there is not a man at the door.</i>
Bha gille aig an dorus,	<i>there was a boy at the door.</i>

62. *Vocabulary.*

co ? (<i>ko</i>) who ?	na gillean (<i>nü keelyün</i>) the boys
cu (<i>koo</i>) a dog.	'nuair (<i>nooür</i>) when
na coin (<i>nü ko-yn</i>) the dogs.	an de (<i>un jã</i>) yesterday.
na daoine (<i>nü döy-nü</i>) the men.	aig (<i>āk</i>) at.
aig an tigh (<i>āk ün tâ y</i>) at the house, at home.	ann (<i>aunn</i>) in; there.
an racir (<i>ün rō-yr</i>) last night	

63. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Co a bha a 'dol an sin ?
2. Cha'n eil mi a' dol a nis.
3. Bha mi an sin an racir.
4. Co bha aig an dorus ?
5. Bha na daoine an sin.
6. Bha na gillean a' tighinn dachaidh.
7. Bha an t-each mall ach bha e crubach.
8. Bha na coin a' dol dachaidh.
9. 'Nuair a bha sibh an sin bha mi sgith.
10. Bha sinn an sin an de.
11. Co bha aig a' bhaile ?
12. Bha iad aig a' bhaile.
13. Bha an cu aig an dorus.
14. Bha na coin an so an raoir.
15. Bha iad an sin an de.
16. Am bheil i an so a nis ?
17. Bha i an so nuair a bha thu-sa an so.
18. Bha i fuar.
19. Co bha an so an de ?
20. Bha e aig an tigh.

64. Now translate into Gaelic:—

1. The horse was going to the town.
2. The boys were at the door last night.
3. There is a man coming to the town.
4. He was coming yesterday.
5. I was there last night.
6. The dogs were going home.
7. There was a dog at the door.
8. It was at the door to-day.
9. When it was here it was wet.
10. They were tired last night.
11. He was going home yesterday.
12. I was coming home when I was tired.
13. The horse was lame.
14. The dogs were here yesterday.
15. A dog was here, but the dogs were at home last night.
16. Who was here yesterday ?
17. A man was at the door.
18. He was ready.

LESSON V.

65. VERB " TO BE " ; PARADIGM OF THE PAST TENSE.

Independent **bha** (*va*) was, wert, or were.
Dependent **robh** (*ro*) was, wert, or were.

bha mi (<i>va mee</i>)	I was.
an robh mi? (<i>ün ro mee</i>)	was I?
cha robh mi (<i>cha ro mee</i>)	I was not.
nach robh mi? (<i>nach ro mee</i>)	was I not?
ma bha mi (<i>mü va mee</i>)	if I were.
na'n robh mi (<i>nün ro mee</i>)	if I were.
mur an robh mi (<i>mur ün ro mee</i>)	if I were not.
ged a bha mi (<i>ket ü va mee</i>)	though I were.
ged nach robh mi (<i>ket nach ro mee</i>)	though I were not.
gu'n robh mi (<i>kün ro mee</i>)	that I was.
nach robh mi (<i>nach ro mee</i>)	that I was not.

66. All Gaelic verbs have a special form for use after the relative pronoun ; but in the present and past tenses notice that we use the independent forms of the verb **bi**, i.e., **tha** and **bha** to follow the relative pronoun **a**, and the conditional particles **ged** and **ma**. In the future of the verb **bi** we have a special form for use after these as will be shown.

67. When the relative pronoun is nominative it precedes the verb and no other pronoun is necessary after it.

An duine a tha an so, *the man who is here.*
 An duine a bha an sin, *the man who was there.*

68. To make our statement more emphatic, we add what we term an emphatic suffix to the pronouns. Thus we have

mi **thu** **e** **i** **sinn** **sibh** **iad**
mise **thusa** **esan** **ise** **sinne** **sibhse** **iadsan**

Ma tha thusa a' dol, tha mise a' dol, *if you are going, I am going.*

69. **Nuair**, literally **an uair a**, " the time that " = " the hour which " = " when," and really an adverbial phrase, generally written **nuair a** or simply **nuair**. The relative **a**, " that," being often omitted, as it often is in English.

70. *Vocabulary.*

leisg adj. (*llāshk*) lazy.

caillte adj. (*kāyl tchü*) lost.

thubhairt irr. v. (*hoo ürtch*) said.

anns a' phairc (*auns ü fá yrk*) in the park.

anns a' choille (*auns ü choil yü*) in the wood.

71. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. An robh an duine aig an doras ? 2. Cha robh e aig an doras.
 3. An robh an t-each anns a' phairc ? 4. Cha robh. 5. Bha mi sgith.
 6. An robh na gilleann anns a' bhaile ? 7. Cha robh iad anns a' bhaile.
 8. Bha na coin mall. 9. Bha na coin luath ach bha iad crubach.
 10. Nach robh iad anns a' phairc ? 11. Bha iad anns a' choille.
 12. Nuair a bha iad an so an raoir bha mi sgith. 13. Nach robh iad sgith ?
 14. Cha robh, ach bha iad fliuch. 15. Bha na coin cailte anns a' choille an de.
 16. Thubhairt e gu'n robh e cailte anns a' bhaile an raoir. 17. Mur an robh iad an sud an diugh, bha mise ann an de.
 18. Na'n robh mi mall, bha mi leisg. 19. Tha sinn a' tighinn a nis. 20. Nach robh sinn an sin ? 21. Cha robh. 22. Thubhairt e gu'n robh e a' dol dachaidh.

72. Now translate English into Gaelic :—

1. Was the horse in the park ? 2. No, the horse was in the wood.
 3. Were the men at the door ? 4. They were not at the door.
 5. A man was at the door last night. 6. Was he wet ? 7. He said that he was not wet.
 8. They were in the wood last night. 9. The horse was there to-day.
 10. If it was there to-day it was not there last night. 11. The dogs were swift though they were lame. 12. The day was wet.
 13. We were tired last night. 14. He said if we were going home he was going to the town. 15. Was he not slow ? 16. No, he was quick.
 17. The dog was lost in the wood last night. 18. He says that the dog was lost in the town yesterday. 19. If I were lazy he was slow. 20. We were cold in the park to-day. 21. Who was in the park yesterday ? 22. I was not there.

LESSON VI.

73. VERB " TO BE " ; SUBJUNCTIVE TENSE, INDEPENDENT FORM.

Singular.

1st	bhithinn or bhiom (<i>vee-yinn</i> or <i>veeüm</i>)	I would be.
2nd.	bhitheadh tu (<i>vee-ügh too</i>)	thou wouldst be.
3rd.	bhitheadh e (<i>vee-ügh ä</i>)	he would be.

Plural.

1st.	bhitheamaid or bhiomaid (<i>veeümätch</i>)	we would be.
2nd.	bhitheadh sibh (<i>vee-ügh sheev</i>)	you would be.
3rd.	bhitheadh iad (<i>vee-ügh eeüt</i>)	they would be.

74. The Subjunctive is the only tense in which any change takes place, and this in the first person singular and plural, in which the pronouns have become amalgamated with the verb. Also termed the imperfect, customary, or habitual past.

Bhithinn I would be, or I used to be.

75.

Vocabulary.

briste adj. (*brees-tchü*) broken. **an sgian** f. (*ün skeepün*) the knife.
an-moch adj. (*ünümoch*) late. **an uinneag** f. (*oonyack*) the window.

76. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Bhitheadh tu sgith. 2. Bhitheadh tu an-moch an raoir. 3. Bhitheamaid a' tighinn dachaidh a nis. 4. Bhitheadh iad mall. 5. Bhithinn an sin a nis ach bha mise an-moch. 6. Bhitheadh na daoine a' dol do'n bhaile. 7. Bhitheadh an t-each crubach. 8. Bhitheadh na coin cailte. 9. Bhitheadh iad fliuch. 10. Bhitheadh e fliuch anns a' choille. 11. Bhitheadh an sgian cailte. 12. Bhitheadh an uinneag briste. 13. Bhitheadh i cailte anns an tigh. 14. Bhitheadh e an-moch a' dol do'n bhaile an diugh. 15. Bhithinn an sin na 'n robh thu-sa ann.

77. Now translate into Gaelic :—

1. I used to be quick but I am tired now. 2. You would be late in coming home last night. 3. The men would be home yesterday. 4. The dogs would be lame. 5. The horse would be slow coming home. 6. They would be tired. 7. I would be at home yesterday but I was at the town last night. 8. The knife would be broken. 9. It would be lost in the house. 10. The window would be wet. 11. It would be broken. 12. The boys would be in the wood to-day. 13. They would be wet. 14. I would be there if you were. 15. He would be in the park in the evening.

LESSON VII.

78. VERB " TO BE " ; PARADIGM OF SUBJUNCTIVE
TENSE.

Independent **bhitheadh** or **bhiodh** (*vee-ügh*) would be.

Dependent, **bitheadh** or **biodh** (*bee-ügh*) would be.

am bithinn (<i>üm bee-ynn</i>)	would I be ?
am bitheamaid (<i>üm beeümäth</i>)	would we be ?
am bitheadh e (<i>üm beeügh ä</i>)	would he be ?
cha bhithinn (<i>cha vee-ynn</i>)	I would not be.
cha bitheamaid (<i>cha veeümäth</i>)	we would not be.
cha bhitheadh e (<i>cha veeügh ä</i>)	he would not be.
nach bitheadh e ? (<i>nach beeügh ä</i>)	would he not be ?
na'm bitheadh e (<i>nam beeügh ä</i>)	if he would be.
mur bitheadh e (<i>mür beeügh ä</i>)	if he would not be.
ged a bhitheadh e (<i>ket ü veeügh ä</i>)	though he would be.
ged nach bitheadh e	though he would not be.
gu'm bitheadh e (<i>küm beeügh ä</i>)	that he would be.
nach bitheadh e (<i>nach beeügh ä</i>)	that he would not be.

79. In these dependent forms of the subjunctive notice that the verb is not aspirated after the particles **am, an, nach, na'm, na'n, mur, gu'm, gu'n, ged nach**, but that the initial of the verb is aspirated after **cha** and **ged a**. All verbs whose initial letter is an aspirable one are affected in this way in the subjunctive.

80. *Vocabulary.*

sgoil f. (*sgoll*) school.

anns an fheasgar (*auns ün es-gür*) in the evening.

anns a' bhàta (*auns ü vátü*) in the boat.

am maireach (*üm mârüch*) to-morrow.

81. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Cha bhitheamaid sgith na'm bitheadh i a' dol. 2. Na'm bitheadh i deas bhithinn-sa. 3. Cha bhitheadh an sgian briste. 4. Bha an sgian briste ach tha i cailte a nis. 5. Bhitheadh an duine aig an tigh anns an fheasgar. 6. Bhitheadh iad anns a' choille an de. 7. Nuair a bha iad og bhitheadh iad anns an sgoil. 8. Nach bitheadh e anns a' bhaile am maireach? 9. Thubhairt e nach bitheadh e an sin am maireach ach gu 'm bitheadh e an earrar. 10. Am bithinn blath anns a' bhaile? 11. Bhitheadh tu blath anns a' bhaile. 12. Nach bithinn fuar anns a' phairc? 13. Cha bhitheadh tu fuar anns a' phairc. 14. Nach bitheadh esan sgith anns a' choille. 15. Bhitheadh e sgith anns a' choille. 16. Mur bithinn fuar, bhithinn blath. 17. Bhitheadh an uinneag briste. 18. Na'n robh mi an sin cha bhitheadh i briste.

82. Now translate into Gaelic :—

1. Though the dogs would be there they would be tired. 2. It would be cold there. 3. We would be going though the men would be late. 4. I would not be tired if she would be there. 5. If I was there I would be warm. 6. He said he would be late to-morrow. 7. The window would be broken. 8. It would not be broken if you would be there. 9. He said they would be going to the town to-morrow. 10. Would they be going to the town in the evening? 11. Would it be warm in the town? 12. That man would be at the house last night. 13. When they were young they would be in school. 14. Would the knife not be broken? 15. It would be lost in the wood. 16. They would be in the wood last night. 17. Would I not be cold in the park? 18. You would not be cold in the park. 19. Would it not be wet in the wood? 20. He would be wet in the wood. 21. He said he would be ready and that he would be in the boat. 22. They said they would be at home to-morrow.

LESSON VIII.

83. VERB "TO BE"; FUTURE INDEPENDENT TENSE.

- | | | | |
|------------------------|---------------------|----------------------|----------------|
| 1. bithidh mi, | I shall or will be | bithidh sinn, | we shall be. |
| 2. bithidh thu, | thou shalt be. | bithidh sibh, | you shall be. |
| 3. bithidh e, i | he, etc., shall be. | bithidh iad, | they shall be. |
- (Pronounced *pee-hee-mee*).

84. The English auxiliaries "shall" and "will" when used to express future action are not translated into Gaelic; the Gaelic verb itself assumes a form suited to that meaning.

85. The past tense may be termed the narrative and the future the philosophical—the former describes what once happened and the latter describes what always happens.

86. *Vocabulary.*

- an tuathanach** (*ün tooanüch*) the farmer.
an ciobair (*ün keepür*) the shepherd.
na h-eich so (*nü häch sho*) these horses.
am bàta (*üm bpätü*) the boat.
dorcha (*dtorüchü*) dark.
air ball (*är paul*) immediately.
an nochd (*ün-nochk*) to-night.

87. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Cha robh an tuathanach an so an raoir 2. Ach bithidh e an so an diugh. 3. Bithidh na h-eich so sgith. 4. Bithidh an ciobair an sin. 5. Bithidh am bàta an so air ball. 6. Bithidh e dorcha air ball. 7. Cha robh na h-eich sin an sin an de. 8. Bithidh na gillean leisg. 9. Bithidh mi a' dol dachaidh a nis. 10. Bithidh e a' dol do 'n bhaile. 11. Bithidh thu sgith a nis. 12. Bithidh mi fuar an diugh. 13. Bithidh na h-eich so og. 14. Bithidh e anns a' bhàta anns an fheasgar. 15. Bithidh sinn a' dol do 'n tigh am maireach. 16. Bithidh iad an sin an diugh.

88. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. The shepherd will be here immediately. 2. The farmer was here yesterday and he will be here to-day. 3. These horses will be tired. 4. They will be coming home late. 5. They will be there now. 6. We shall be coming to the town in the evening. 7. You will be going to the town. 8. It will be dark immediately. 9. The boat was here last night and it will be coming to-day. 10. It will be here yet. 11. These horses will be going home now. 12. The boys will be lazy. 13. It will be cold to-day. 14. The farmer will be coming home immediately. 15. He is there now. 16. We will be going to the house to-morrow. 17. You will be going to-night.

LESSON IX.

89. VERB "TO BE"; PARADIGM OF THE FUTURE TENSE.

<i>Independent Future,</i>	bithidh (<i>peehee</i>).	
<i>Dependent Future,</i>	bi (<i>pee</i>).	
<i>Relative future,</i>	bhitheas (<i>veehüs</i>).	
bithidh mi (<i>peehee mee</i>)		I will be.
am bi mi? (<i>üm pee mee</i>)		will I be?
cha bhi mi (<i>cha vee mee</i>)		I will not be.
nach bi mi? (<i>nach pee mee</i>)		will I not be.
ma bhitheas mi (<i>mü veehüs mee</i>)		If I will be.
mur bi mi (<i>mür pee mee</i>)		If I will not be.
ged a bhitheas mi (<i>ket ü veehüs mee</i>)		though I will be.
ged nach bi mi (<i>ket nach pee mee</i>)		though I will not be.
gu'm bi mi (<i>küm pee mee</i>)		that I will be
nach bi mi (<i>nach pee mee</i>)		that I will not be.

THE RELATIVE PRONOUN AS NOMINATIVE.

90. The relative future is generally used only in the third person, except where an emphatic statement of existence is made, when we may say '**s mi a bhitheas** "I will be (indeed)." Literally the form **a bhitheas** means "who will be," and **a bhitheas e** "whom he will be." For simple "he will be" the form is **bithidh e**. The relative pronoun **a** in all cases and tenses precedes the verb which it always aspirates. **Bhios** is a contracted form of **bhitheas**.

Am fear a bhitheas an so, *the man who will be here.*

An gille a bhitheas an sin, *the boy who will be there.*

91. Vocabulary.

oidhche (<i>oichü</i>) night.	leis (<i>lläsh</i>) with him, his.
am feasgar (<i>üm fes-gür</i>) the evening.	anns (<i>auns</i>) in (<i>before</i> the).
an earar (<i>ün yär ür</i>) the day after to-morrow.	gle (<i>klā</i>) very (aspirates the adj.).

92. These demonstratives are placed after the definite noun.

so (*sho*) this, these (near at hand—here).

sin (*sheen*) that, those (further away—there).

ud (*oodt*) yon (much further away—yonder).

Bha am fear sin an sin an raoir, *that man was there last night.*
(lit. : *the man there was there last night*).

93. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Ged a bhitheas e aig a' bhaile an diugh, bithidh e anns a' bhàta. anns an fheasgar. 2. An duine a bhitheas an-moch. 3. Am bi thu

anns a' bhaile? 4. Am bi e gle sgith? 5. Bithidh e gle sgith agus bithidh e gle leisg. 6. Am bi mi anns a' bhaile an nochd? 7. Bithidh mi anns a' bhaile am feasgar so. 8. Nach bi e anns a' choille? 9. Cha bhi e anns a' choille. 10. Thubhairt mi gu'm bi e an so am maireach. 11. Tha thu ag radh nach bi e an so. 12. Bithidh an tuathanach sin an sin am maireach ach bithidh an ciobair an sin an earar. 13. Ma bhitheas e an sin am maireach cha bhi mi an so. 14. Bithidh an oidhche gle dhorcha. 15. Cha bhi. 16. Tha an duine a bhitheas a' dol leis an so. 17. Bithidh an gille so an sin. 18. Nach bi na gillean anns a' bhàta am feasgar so. 19. Thubhairt iad gu'm bitheadh iad an sin an nochd. 20. Mur bi iad deas air ball bithidh sinn an-moch.

94. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. I said he will be late. 2. Will he be here to-night? 3. He will not be here this afternoon, but he will be here in the evening. 4. I will not be with him. 5. Will he not be in the town to-day? 6. The man who will be in the town to-morrow. 7. I will be coming with him. 8. I will not be there to-morrow. 9. If the boy will be going with him they will be very late. 10. The boy will not be very quick. 11. He will be in the wood immediately. 12. Who will be with him? 13. The man will be ready immediately. 14. The man who will be ready will not be lazy. 15. He will be very tired when he comes home. 16. These boys will not be coming home to-day. 17. They said that they will be in the town to-morrow. 18. Though they will be in the boat to-day I will not be there. 19. If it will be wet in the afternoon we will not be going to the town. 20. I will be ready to-morrow. 21. Will you be going to the town the day after to-morrow? 22. Yes.

LESSON X.

95. VERB "TO BE"; IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Singular.

1st Per.	bitheam (<i>bee-üm</i>)	let me be.
2nd „	bi (<i>bee</i>)	be thou.
3rd „	bitheadh e (<i>bee-ügh ā</i>)	let him be.

Plural.

1st Per.	bitheamaid (<i>bee-ümāich</i>)	let us be.
2nd „	bithibh (<i>bee-yv</i>)	be ye.
3rd „	bitheadh iad (<i>bee-ügh eeüt</i>)	let them be.

96. The formation of the persons in the imperative of this verb is according to the rules governing all Gaelic verbs. The 2nd person sing. of the imperative being termed the root of the verb. In the regular verbs all tenses can

be formed from the root either by affixing a termination, by prefixing a particle, or by aspiration (Lesson XL.)

97. The 2nd person sing. and plural is the order of command; no pronoun is necessary unless for further emphasis, when the emphatic pronoun **thu-sa** can be used, **bi thu-sa**.

98. The 1st and 3rd persons express a desire, whether purpose or request. The pronoun must be expressed in the 3rd person.

99. An imperative negative can be made by placing the imperative particle **na** in front of any verb in the imperative mood. This particle is reserved for, and can only be used to form, this imperative negative or imperative prohibition, as :—**buail mi**, strike me; **na buail mi**, strike me not. It does not cause aspiration. No other particles are used with the imperative.

100. The 3rd person imperative is very often used to translate the word “whether.”

Bitheadh e 'na rìgh no 'na fhìlath, *whether he be a king or a prince
let him be a king or a prince*

101. Vocabulary.

lag-chridheach (*lakchreeüch*) faint-hearted.

treun (*trān*) adj. brave.

duinte (*dtoontchü*) adj. shut.

samhach (*savüch*) adj. quiet.

fosgailte (*foshylltchü*) adj. open.

102. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Na bi lag-chridheach. 2. Bitheamaid anns a' choille an nochd. 3. Bitheadh an duine treun. 4. Bitheadh an dorus duinte. 5. Na bitheadh an uinneag fosgailte. 6. Bitheamaid deas. 7. Na bitheadh iad anns a' bhaile an diugh. 8. Bitheamaid anns a' bhaile an nochd. 9. Na bitheadh e leisg. 10. Bitheadh an uinneag duinte. 11. Bitheadh e a' dol dachaidh a nis. 12. Na bitheadh e an-moch a nis. 13. Na bitheadh an uinneag briste. 14. Na bitheadh an sgian cailte. 15. Bitheam a' dol a nis. 16. Na bitheadh na gilleam anns a' choille am feasgar so. 17. Bitheadh iad treun. 18. Bitheamaid leis an earar.

103. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Let us be in the wood to-night. 2. Let the man be brave. 3. Don't let him be faint-hearted. 4. Be brave. 5. Let them be with him in the wood to-morrow. 6. Don't let the boys be quiet. 7. You be quiet. 8. Let us be brave. 9. Don't let him be late to-night. 10. Let us be in the town to-night. 11. Don't let the window be broken. 12. Let the window be opened immediately. 13. Don't

let the door be shut. 14. Let us be ready this evening. 15. Let the door be shut now. 16. Don't let the knife be lost. 17. Don't be faint-hearted. 18. Let us be brave to-night. 19. Let me be with him to-morrow. 20. Don't let us be cold. 21. Be quiet.

LESSON XI.

104. VERB "TO BE"; RECAPITULATORY. GENERAL EXERCISE ON THE VERB *bi*.

Vocabulary.

'*san lathair* (*sūn llāūr*) present. **no** or.
an drásd (*ūn drast*) presently, now.
bo, na ba (*bpa*) a cow, the cows.
air a' mhonadh (*āi ū vonūgh*) on the hill.
anns an fhang (*auns ūn ank*) in the pen.
na feidh (*fā-y*) (the) deer (plural).
na caoraich (*nū hō-rych*) the sheep (plural).
anns a' mhaduinn (*vattynn*) in the morning.
anns an achadh (*auns ūn achūgh*) in the field.

105. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Tha na caoraich anns an fhang. 2. An robh iad air a' mhonadh an raoir? 3. Cha robh ach tha iad anns an fhang an drasd. 4. Bha na ba cailte an de. 5. Bha na feidh anns a' mhonadh am feasgar so. 6. 'Nuair a thainig e do 'n bhàta bha e sgith. 7. An uair a bha iad og bhitheadh iad anns a' bhaile. 8. Tha na gillean an so an diugh ach cha robh iad an so an de. 9. Bhitheamaid a' tighinn dachaidh an raoir. 10. Bhitheadh an uinneag briste. 11. Tha an dorus duinte. 12. Bhitheadh iad an-moch an raoir. 13. Bitheamaid treun. 14. Tha na h-eich so an sin a nis. 15. Am bheil an cu aig an dorus. 16. Tha e aig a' bhàta. 17. Tha na ba anns an fhang ach bha iad air a' mhonadh an sud an de. 18. Bitheamaid anns a' bhaile anns a' mhaduinn am maireach. 19. Ma bhitheas e aig an tigh an nochd bitheadh mise an sin an drasd.

106. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. When I was in the wood yesterday the boy was not present. 2. He will be here to-night or to-morrow. 3. The farmer was in the town when I was there in the morning. 4. Is the window not broken? No. 5. The dog is not in this field, it is on the hill. 6. There are deer on the hill. 7. Were the men not here last night? 8. No, they were in the boat. 9. Though you will not be ready I will be. 10. The deer were not in this field, they were on the hill. 11. These boys were not in the boat. 12. When we were there they were not present. 13. They will be there presently. 14. If the sheep are not in the pen they will be in the field. 15. The shepherd was on the hill. 16. Don't let that stick be lost. 17. Let the window be opened in the morning. 18. When the shepherd was there the farmer was in the town.

LESSON XII.

IDIOMS.

107. An Idiom is an expression that has acquired by usage a certain meaning, which becomes lost in a word-for-word translation into another language ; so that in order to convey the meaning in that other language the form of expression must be changed.

108. Thus **tha an leabhar aig an duine** is a Gaelic Idiom, for its sense is lost in a word-for-word English translation like " the book is at the man," and, in order to convey the true meaning, the English expression must be changed to " the man has the book."

109. Idioms constitute one of the chief difficulties in learning any language, and the student is recommended to master the few Gaelic Idioms which will now be introduced into these exercises.

110. These Idioms enter much into the spoken and written language and well deserve particular attention, for there is not a page written in which they are not to be found, nor can there be a single conversation without their use.

TO DENOTE POSSESSION.

111. VERB " HAVE " **bi** WITH THE PREPOSITION **aig**.

The verb " have " is in English generally an auxiliary verb, but it is not always such. When it is used in English to indicate " possession " it must be translated by the Gaelic verb **bi** along with the preposition **aig**, at. Thus " I have a book " becomes in this idiom " a book is at me," or " there is a book at me " or " to me," and similarly through all the pronouns. This is a somewhat similar idiom to the Latin form, "**est mihi liber**," " there is a book to me," etc.

112. Such a sentence one might expect to be translated into Gaelic **tha leabhar aig mi**, " a book is at me." Instead, however, we use a combination of pronoun and preposition called a prepositional pronoun. Hence we write **tha leabhar agam**. (Prep. Pro. par. 404).

113. Observe that in this construction the subject of the English sentence becomes the object in Gaelic idiom. In **tha leabhar agam**, "I have a book," **leabhar** is nominative to **tha** (and so comes after the verb), and not as in the corresponding English sentence "I have a book," in which "book" is in the objective case. This order of the words holds good no matter how many subjects to the verb are introduced. They are all in Gaelic nominatives to **tha**, and in English objectives after "have."

114. PREPOSITIONAL PRONOUNS FORMED FROM
aig "AT."

aig mi becomes	agam (<i>akūm</i>)	at me	= I have.
aig thu „	agad (<i>akūd</i>)	at thee	= thou hast.
aig e „	aige (<i>ākū</i>)	at him	= he has.
aig i „	aice (<i>āch-kū</i>)	at her	= she has.
aig sinn „	againn (<i>ak-yūn</i>)	at us	= we have.
aig sibh „	agaibh (<i>akyv</i>)	at you	= you have.
aig iad „	aca (<i>ach-kū</i>)	at them	= they have.

115. Examples of the use of these prepositional pronouns :—

Tha peann agad (agad-sa)	<i>thou hast a pen.</i>
Tha bo aige (aige-san)	<i>he has a cow.</i>
Tha ad aice (aice-se)	<i>she has a hat.</i>
Nach eil sgian aig a' ghille ?	<i>has the boy not a knife ?</i>
Cha'n eil da leabhar aig a' chaileig.	<i>the girl has not two books.</i>
Ged nach robh an t-airgid aige an de, bithidh e aige am maireach,	<i>though he had not the money yesterday he will have it to-morrow (though the money was not at him yeaterday it will be at him to-morrow).</i>

116. These pronouns, **agam**, etc., denote possession but do not necessarily signify ownership, take this example: **tha tigh aige**, "he has a house," which means that he possesses a house which may or may not be his own, i.e. he may be only a tenant. (par. 184).

117. And the idiom which thus expresses our relation to our material property is also used to express our relation to our immaterial properties, or bodily and mental activities, which are in some way subject to our control.

Tha fuath agam da (<i>foö</i>)	<i>I hate him = hate is at me to him.</i>
Tha truas agam ris (<i>troöis</i>)	<i>I pity him = I have pity for him.</i>
Tha gaol agam (<i>göll</i>)	<i>I love = I have love.</i>

But I cannot say **tha tinneas agam**, "sickness is at me," when I mean to tell you that "I am sick." Sickness is generally outside our control and is looked on as an infliction which comes "on us," as will be shown.

118. *Vocabulary.*

an leabhar (*ün llyo-ür*) the book.

aig a' chaileig (*āk ü challyk*) nf. at the girl.

peann (*pyawnn*) nm. a pen.

119. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Am bi bo agam. 2. Bithidh bo agam agus cha bhi bo agad-sa. 3. Ged nach eil bo agad. 4. Ma bhitheas bo aice. 5. Tha peann aige. 6. Tha tigh agad. 7. Nach eil sgian agam? 8. Cha'n eil sgian agam. 9. Tha an sgian aig a' ghille. 10. Tha am bàta aige. 11. Tha na h-eich sin agad. 12. Tha an sgian agad. 13. Tha na coin aca ach tha bo againn. 14. Tha an t-each agam ach tha an cu agad. 15. Tha an leabhar agam agus tha leabhar aig a' chaileig. 16. Bha na h-eich sin againn an raoir.

120. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. I have a horse. 2. He has a house. 3. Has he not a house? 4. We have a horse and a dog. 5. He had a dog but he has not it now. 6. We have a cow. 7. Have you a hat? 8. She has a hat. 9. I have not a hat now. 10. I pity him. 11. Has he not the book? 12. He had the book yesterday. 13. He has not a knife to-day. 14. You had the knife last night. 15. We had the dogs on the hill but the cow was in the pen there. 16. There it is now. 17. You will have a cow to-morrow. 18. Will the farmer have a cow to-day? 19. Will the girl have that book now? 20. I have the book to-day, the boy will have it to-morrow, and the girl will have it the day after. 21. The man had it last night.

LESSON XIII.

THE VERB "TO WANT" = "TO NEED."

121. In a similar idiomatic manner the English verb "to want," with a wish or desire "to have," is translated. The verb **bi** is used in all its tenses with the preposition **o** or **ua** "from," or the prepositional pronouns formed therefrom.

122. Prepositional pronouns formed from **o**, **bho**, "from."

uam (*oo-üm*) or **bhuam** (*voo-üm*) from me.

uait (*oo-atch*) or **bhuat** (*voo-ahtt*) from thee.

uaithe (*oo-ây-l.ü*) or **bhuaithe** (*voo-ây-hü*) from him.

uaipe	(oo-áy-pü) or	bhuaipe	(voo-áv-pü) from her.
uainn	(oo-áynn) or	bhuainn	(voo-áynn) from us.
uaibh	(ooá-yv) or	bhuaibh	(vooá-yv) from you.
uapa	(oo-áh-pü) or	bhuapa	(voo-áh-pü) from them.

123. Examples of their use :—

Tha leabhar uam,	<i>I want a book (a book is from me).</i>
Tha sgian uait,	<i>you want a knife (a knife is from you).</i>
Ciod tha uait ?	<i>what would you have ?</i>
De tha uaithe ?	<i>what does he want ?</i>
Tha uam thu bhi sona,	<i>I want you to be happy.</i>
Tha uam e a bhi agad,	<i>I want you to have it (to be in possession of it).</i>
Uam na agam e	<i>whether it is mine or not (from me or to me).</i>
Tha an t-airgid sin uainn a nis,	<i>we want that money now.</i>
Tha uam a bhi ann,	<i>I want to be there.</i>
Tha thu ri bhi ann,	<i>you are to be there.</i>
Tilg uait an sgian sin.	<i>throw from you that knife.</i>
Cha chomasach le duine an ni nach bitheadh aige a thoirt uaithe.	<i>It is impossible for a man to give away what he does not possess. (lit. It is not possible for (with) a man the thing which would not be with (at) him to give from him).</i>

124. *Vocabulary.*

cuan m. (kooün) an ocean.
aig an iasgair (āk ün y askür) at the fisherman.
an trath so adv. (ün tra sho) just now.
Seumas (shāmus) James.
an t-airgid (ün ttärygytt) the money.
c'uine a? (koon-ü) when? (what the time that?).

125. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Tha leabhar uait. 2. Tha am bàta uapa. 3. Bha am bàta aca an raoir ach tha i uapa a nis. 4. Ciod tha uaibe ? 5. Tha uapa a bhi ann. 6. De tha uam ? 7. Tha an leabhar uam an nochd. 8. Am bheil leabhar uait ? 9. Cha'n eil an leabhar bho 'n chaileig. 10. Bha peann uaibe. 11. Tha an cuan o'n iasgair. 12. Bithidh am bàta aig an iasgair an trath so.

126. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Throw from you that book. 2. James wants the hat to-day. 3. Do you want the money ? 4. I want that money now. 5. You want to be there to-morrow. 6. What does she want ? 7. She wants a hat. 8. What would he have ? 9. He wanted a book but he will not have it now. 10. Did he not have a book yesterday ? 11. He had a book yesterday but he wants it to-day. 12. Whether it is his or not. 13. He wants this book the day after to-morrow.

LESSON XIV.

THE VERB "TO KNOW."

127. The English verb "know," is translated by the Gaelic noun **fios** "knowledge," and is used in the idiomatic form illustrated in the preceding lesson. **Tha fios aig** (*ha feess āk*) "to have knowledge" (knowledge is at).

128. We use **fios** when the verb "know" means "to recollect," "to be aware of," "to be sensible of," or when we ask or give information or intelligence, etc. It is always used when "know" is followed by "who, what, where," or other dependent clause.

Tha fios agad na thubhairt e,	<i>you know what he said.</i>
Tha fios agad gu de thubhairt e.	<i>I know where he was.</i>
Tha fios agam far an robh e.	<i>you know in what place he was.</i>
Tha fios agad c'aite an robh e.	
Tha fios aice co a tha aig an doras,	<i>she knows who is at the door.</i>
Am bheil fios agad cuin a tha e tighinn ?	<i>do you know when he comes ?</i>
Am bheil fios agad ma tha bàta aige ?	<i>do you know if he has a boat ?</i>
Cha'n eil fios agam,	<i>I do not know (there is no knowing at me).</i>
Mur an robh fios aige far an robh am bàta, cia mar a bha fios aige gu'n robh i agaibh ?	<i>If he did not know where the boat was, how did he know that you had it ? (If knowledge was not at him where the boat was, etc.)</i>
Cuin' a fhuair thu fios ?	<i>when did you get the information ?</i>
Bheir mi fios,	<i>I will inform (give notice).</i>
Is beag fios dhomh-sa,	<i>Little do I know.</i>

129. In the same construction **aithne** is the "knowledge" by which we "recognise" or "acknowledge acquaintance," "to know by sight" a person, place or thing, etc.

An aithne dhuit an leabhar so ?	<i>do you know this book (by sight) ? = have you heard of this book ?</i>
Cha'n eil aithne agam air,	<i>I have no knowledge of it.</i>
Tha aithne agam air,	<i>I know it (lit. there is knowledge at me on it = of it).</i>
An aithne dhuit Domhnull ?	<i>do you know Donald ?</i>
Is aithne dhomh Domhnull,	<i>I know Donald (by sight).</i>

130. When "to know" means to be well versed in the subject or well acquainted with it—to know a fact ; that a thing is : to know by heart ; we use **eolach** (*yolach*).

Am bheil thu eolach air an leabhar so ?	<i>do you know (all) this book ?</i>
Am bheil thu fada eolach air Domhnull ?	<i>do you know Donald well ? (are you long acquainted with Donald ?)</i>
Tha mi fada eolach air Domhnull,	<i>I know Donald well (I am long acquainted with Donald).</i>
An robh thu eolach air an tir bhur n-eòlais ?	<i>did you know him in your own country (lit.), were you acquainted with him in your own country ?</i>
Tha e 'na dhuine eolach	<i>he is a man well acquainted.</i>
	<i>he is an intelligent man.</i>

131.

Vocabulary.

Co aig am bheil ? (*ko āk um vāl*) who at whom is = who has ?

co aig an robh ? (*ko āk un ro*) who had ?

toilichte (*tolychtchū*) adj., pleased.

coig (*kō-yk*) nu. adj. five.

tasdain (*ttasttan*) nf. shillings.

gu cinnteach (*goo keenn-ichach*) adv. certainly.

an uiridh (*ūn oor-y*) adv. last year.

dhomh, dhuith (*gov, gootch*) to me, to you.

132. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. An aithne dhuit Seumas ?
2. Cha'n eil aithne agam air.
3. Tha an t-each aig an tuathanach.
4. Co aig am bheil an t-airgiod ?
5. Tha e aig an duine.
6. Co aig an robh am bàta ?
7. Bha i aig an iasgair.
8. Bha am bàta aig Seumas ach cha'n eil i aige a nis.
9. Ma bhitheas an t-airgiod aig a' chaileig bithidh an tigh aig a' ghille.
10. Tha cu aig a' chiobair.
11. Nach eil leabhar agaibh ?
12. Cha'n eil.
13. Bithidh sgian aig a' ghille.
14. Bha coig tasdain aig a' chaileig.
15. Bha sgian aig an iasgair an de ach cha'n eil i aige an diugh.
16. Na'n robh sgian aig an duine bhitheadh e gle thoilichte.
17. Cha robh fios agam gu'n robh sibh an sin.
18. Mur eil fios aig an tuathanach gu'n robh an gille an sin bithidh fios aige a nis.
19. Tha tigh aige anns a' bhaile.
20. Cha'n eil aithne agam air.
21. Cuin a fhuair thu fios ?
22. Bha fios agam far an robh an tigh aige.

133. Translate English into Gaelic :—

1. Do you know (**aithne**) this book ?
2. I do not know it.
3. I have not that book.
4. Have you not this book ? No.
5. Who had it ?
6. James had the book yesterday.
7. I want that book.
8. The fisherman has not a boat now, but he will have it to-morrow.
9. I hadn't five shillings.
10. The boy has not the knife.
11. Who has it ?
12. Do you know who had it ?
13. I know the girl had it last night.
14. Do you know if the farmer has the money now ?
15. I know that he will not have it.
16. Will he have it to-morrow ?
17. Yes, certainly.
18. Do you know if he wants a horse ?
19. Do you know if that man has a dog ?
20. I do not know if he has a dog now, but he had a dog last year.
21. Do you know the shepherd well.
22. I am well acquainted with him.
23. He is an intelligent man.
24. He was at the house yesterday.
25. Was he there this morning ?

LESSON XV.

IDIOMS OF THE VERB **bi**, **bi** WITH **air**.

134. The use of the verb **bi** with the preposition **air** "on," and the prepositional pronouns formed from it is also the cause of several peculiar idiomatic forms of expression.

135. The things which are ours we keep as near us as we can; they are the things "at us"; but there are things that come "to us" not by any act of ours, but against our will; they are visitations, they come "to us" from without and probably from the Unseen. In Gaelic idiom these involuntary visitations are said to be "on us." Hunger, thirst, sickness, sadness, fear, joy, death, in fact any state, quality, feelings or sufferings which affect the body, mind or soul, are expressed in Gaelic as being a burden laid upon the individual or sufferer.

136. Thus "I am thirsty" becomes in this idiom "thirst is on me"; "are you angry?" "is anger on you?" etc.*

Ciod e a tha ort?	<i>what ails thee? (what is it that is on thee).</i>
Tha gradh agam ort-sa,	<i>I love thee (love is at me on you).</i>
Tha bron mor oirnn,	<i>we are very sorrowful (great sorrow is on us).</i>
Tha am fiabhras air,	<i>he has the fever (the fever is on him).</i>
Tha eagal oirre,	<i>she is afraid (fear is on her).</i>
Tha an t-acras air,	<i>he is hungry (hunger is on him).</i>
Bha iongantais air an duine,	<i>the man was astonished (astonishment was on the man).</i>
Na biodh eagal ort,	<i>be not afraid (let not fear be on thee).</i>

137. The same idiom applied to money betokens debt. The fact that "I owe John money" or that "I am under any obligation to pay money to John" is expressed by saying, "John has money on me," the preposition **air** being used before the name of the debtor, and the act of "having" being expressed by **tha** and **aig** as in the previous lesson. "I owe John a hundred pounds" is translated according to idiom, "John has a hundred pounds on me,"

* It is because Gaelic has no primary adjectives for a number of these terms that the noun is used in this idiom. Where primary adjectives are available they are used. **Tha mi tinn.** *I am sick.*

tha ceud punnd Sasunnach* aig Iain orm. (*lit.* there is a hundred pounds at (of) John on me).

Tha deich tasdain agam air *that man owes me ten shillings* (*lit.*, an fhear sin, *I have ten shillings on that man*).

138. The following are the prepositional pronouns formed from **air** :—

air mi	becomes	orm	(<i>or-üm</i>)	on me.
air thu	„	ort	(<i>orst</i>)	on thou.
air e	„	air	(<i>är</i>)	on him.
air i	„	oirre	(<i>orrü</i>)	on her.
air sinn	„	oirnn	(<i>orynn</i>)	on us.
air sibh	„	oirbh	(<i>or-yv</i>)	on you.
air iad	„	orra	(<i>orrüh</i>)	on them.

139.

Vocabulary.

adhaircean (*öyarkün*) horns.

slat (*slláht*) a rod.

ciod? (*kut*) **de?** (*jā*) what?

cluas (*klooüs*) ear.

gu trath (*kootra*) soon.

fhuair (*hooür*) got.

an d'fhuair . . . ? (*un dooür*)
did . . . get?

breac (*bprächk*) a trout.

sporan, a purse.

damh (*dav*) a stag.

air na h-eildean (*är nü häldjen*)
on the hinds.

punnd (*poont*) pound.

arbhar (*arrar*) corn.

uaireadair (*oo-är-ütür*) watch.

lion (*leen*) a net.

ag iasgach (*ak y üsküch*) fishing.

140. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Bha an t-acras air an duine.
2. Bha adhaircean air an damh.
3. Cha'n eil adhaircean air na h-eildean.
4. Tha punnd aig a' chaileig.
5. Tha cluas air a' chat.
6. Mur eil fios aig an tuathanach gu'm bheil na caoraich anns an arbhar, bithidh fios aige gu trath.
7. C'ait an robh sibh an de?
8. Bithidh mi anns a' bhaile gu trath.
9. Bha bron mor ort.
10. Ciod e a tha air?
11. Tha eagal orra.
12. An robh sibh ag iasgach air an loch an de? Bha.
13. An d'fhuair thu breac?
14. Bha bron mor air an duine.
15. Am bheil fios agaibh de'n uair a tha e?
16. Cha'n eil uaireadair agam.

141. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. That horse is lame.
2. Did the man not know that his horse was lame?
3. He did not know.
4. James has a purse.
5. We had a rod and a net when we were fishing.
6. I did not know that the sheep were in the corn.
7. Was it not very warm when you were in town?
8. It was.
9. Are you going fishing to-day?
10. Yes.
11. I do not know if he has a watch.
12. Have you not a watch?
13. James has a watch now.
14. Was the boy not hungry?
15. He was not hungry but he was very tired.
16. The man was very astonished.

* **Punnd Sasunnach** (£1) pound sterling. **Sasunnach** (from Eng. **Saxon—Lowlander**) is generally placed after **punnd** when money is inferred.

17. He was afraid. 18. I was astonished. 19. There are no horns on the hinds but the stag has horns. 20. The man was hungry. 21. I got a pound from the girl. 22. She will be home soon. 23. What ails her? 24. She has the fever. 25. He loves her. 26. They were hungry last night. 27. Did they get home last night.

LESSON XVI.

THE PARTICLE **ann**.

142. The verb **bi** with the particle **ann** is used to denote existence, the particle **ann** generally coming last in the phrase, or forming the chief portion of the predicate. In this position it is adverbial, and is equal to the English locative adverb "there." The verb **bi** denotes existence connected with locality; **ann** serves to strengthen it in that meaning.

143. This combination of **bi** and **ann** is always used in this sense to express the phenomena of nature. Thus in the sentence—"The showers were heavy," something is stated about the showers, but their existence is not questioned, so in Gaelic this is simply **bha na frasan trom**, but if the sentence ran "there were heavy showers," it is simply a statement that they existed, and the sentence would be **bha frasan troma ann**.

Tha aran air a' bhord,
Am bheil aran ann?
Cha'n eil im ann,
Tha fuachd ann an diugh,

there is bread on the table.
is there bread?
there is no butter.
"it is cold to-day" (there is cold-
ness to-day).

Tha e fuar an diugh,
Nach bithinn ann na's mo,

"it is cold to-day."
"That I should not be any more"
(That I should not be (in exis-
tence) there any more).

Ciod a tha ann?

"what is it?" (what is that there
(in existence) or what is that there
that exists).

Tha abhainn ann,
Am bheil thu ann? Iain,
Is e duine math a tha ann,

"there is a river" (a river is there).
"are you there? John."
"he is a good man" (it is (he) a good
man that is there).

144. In all these phrases **ann** agrees in meaning with the English adverb "there," in such phrases as "there are," "there was," "there exists," etc., in which the adverb originally signified location "in that place," but now also

expresses mere existence. It is not difficult to account for this transition.* To be able to say that a thing is in a certain place is to give an emphatic assurance that it exists ; and hence the localising statement has become the statement of existence. Instead of saying " a road is " or " exists," we say " there is a road." In English " there " in this sense always precedes the verb, but in Gaelic the verb always precedes the adverbial particle **ann**.

145. **Ann** as a preposition governs the dative case of nouns and means " rest in."

Ann an tigh,	" in a house."
Anns a' bhaile,	" in the town."

146. **Ann** after a verb of motion means " motion in " and " into," and governs the dative case.

Cuir uisge anns an t-soitheach,	<i>put water into the dish.</i>
Cuir an t-airgiod anns an sporan,	<i>put the money into the purse.</i>
Tha an t-iasg a' snamh anns an uisge,	<i>the fish is swimming in the water.</i>
Chaidh e ann an laigse,	<i>he went into a faint (he fainted)</i>

147. **Ann** as a prepositional pronoun, meaning " in it," " in him " (201).

Cha'n eil ann ach Sasunnach, " *he is but an Englishman*" (lit., *there is not in him but an Englishman*).

148. Vocabulary.

abhainn (<i>avynn</i>) nf. a river.	muir (<i>moor</i>) nm. sea.
fras - an nf. shower, -s,	uisge (<i>ooshkü</i>) nm. water, rain.
iasg (<i>eeusk</i>) nm. fish.	bord (<i>bawrd</i>) nf. a table.
im (<i>em</i>) nm. butter.	aran nm. bread.
chaidh (<i>high</i>) went.	cuir (<i>koor</i>) put.

149. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Am bheil aran ann? 2. Tha uisge ann a nis. 3. Am bheil thu ann? 4. Tha uisge ann an diugh. 5. Tha am breac anns a' mhuir. 6. Tha abhainn ann. 7. Cuir an t-iasg anns an abhainn. 8. Tha an gille anns a' bhaile. 9. Chaidh e do'n bhaile. 10. Tha mi anns a' bhàta. 11. Nach e an t-uisge a bhios ann? 12. Bithidh uisge ann. 13. Tha la math ann. 14. Tha oidhche fhliuch ann. 15. Bha e ann.

150. Translate into Gaelic.

1. There is a boat on the river. 2. There is a man in the boat. 3. The man had bread and butter on the table. 4. There is bread on

* Dr. Bain's Higher English Grammar.

the table, but there is no butter. 5. There are fish in the river. 6. There was rain last night. 7. It was cold and wet yesterday. 8. The showers were heavy last night. 9. It rains now. 10. If we had bread we would not be hungry. 11. Are you there? 12. Is that you? (*lit.* Is it you that is there?) 13. It will rain to-morrow. 14. It is wet to-night. 15. There is rain now.

LESSON XVII.

THE ASSERTIVE VERB **is**.

151. You have already been introduced to the verbs **tha** and **bheil**. We have a third verb which is also used to translate into Gaelic the English verb "am, art, is, are."

152. This verb is **is**, pronounced like "iss" in the English word "hiss." It serves to express a simple assertion, to connect an attribute with its subject, to predicate one thing of another, as:—**is mise an treoraiche**, "I am the guide."

An treoraiche here is the attribute of **mise**, or is predicated of **mise** by the verb **is**. **Tha** denotes a qualified existence; i.e., in relation to time, place, or some qualifying condition. **Is** denotes simple existence without reference to anything else whatsoever. Examples of both verbs are given in the following sentence, which the student would do well to analyse—**Is mise a tha ann**, "It is I who am there—in a certain place—here."

153. The verb **is** is generally used impersonally. In such cases a neuter pronoun subject is contained in the verb, so that the noun or pronoun that follows it is not a subject but a predicate; when the latter is a definite or proper noun it will be a double predicate. Thus: **is mise**, "it is I"; **is tusa**, "it is thou"; **is e Seumas**, "it is (he) James." Being an emphatic and assertive verb, the emphatic pronouns are generally used.

154. This is a defective verb, having only a present tense **is**, and a past tense **bu**. But they enter into many combinations and idiomatic clauses along with a noun and preposition, verbs and adverbs, as:—**Is urrainn do**, can; **is leir do**, see; **is coir do**, ought; **is tu bhios sona**, 'tis you who will be happy; **is gorm a dh' fhas e**, green did it grow.

155. There is no dependent form in either the present or past tense. In the present tense, after the particles, the

verb **is** is omitted and only the particles remain, but the idea is as distinctly conveyed as if the verb had been expressed ; as, **cha mhi**, " it is not I."

Present Tense.

is	it is.
is mi	it is I <i>or</i> I am.
is tu	it is thou.
is e	it is he, it.
an ?	is it ?
am mi ?	is it I ?
an tu ?	is it thou ?
cha	it is not.
cha mhi	it is not I.
cha tu	it is not thou.
cha'n e	it is not he.
nach ?	is it not ?
ma's	if it is.
mur	if it is not.
ged a's	though it is.
ged nach	though it is not.
gur	that it is.
nach	that it is not.

Past Tense.

bu	it was.
bu mhi	it was I <i>or</i> I was.
bu tu	it was thou.
b'e	it was he, it.
am bu ?	was it ?
am bu mhi ?	was it I ?
am bu tu ?	was it thou ?
cha bu	it was not.
cha bu mhi	it was not I.
cha bu tu	it was not thou.
cha b'e	it is not he.
nach bu ?	was it not ?
na'm bu	if it was.
mur bu	if it was not.
ged bu	though it was.
ged nach bu	though it was not.
gu'm bu	that it was.
nach bu	that it was not.

156. In the past tense **bu** causes aspiration of words immediately following :—**bu mhi**, " it was I " ; **bu mhor am bonnach**, " the cake was large " ; but words beginning with a **d** or **t** are not aspirated—**bu tu**, " it was thou " ; **bu dalma**, " 'twas impertinent." **Bu** loses its vowel when followed by a vowel—**b'e**, " it was he " ; **b'iad**, " it was they " ; **b'urrainn domh**, " I could."

WHERE THE VERB **is** MUST BE USED.

157. The verb **is** is used when both subject and predicate are definite ; when in the English sentence the verb " to be " is followed by a definite noun, i.e., (a) a proper noun ; (b) a common noun with the definite article ; (c) a common noun with a possessive pronoun ; (d) or by a pronoun predicate.

(a) is e Seumas	<i>it is (he) James.</i>
(b) is tusa an righ,	<i>you are the king.</i>
(c) is tusa mo mhathair	<i>you are my mother.</i>
(d) is mise e, is e so,	<i>I am he, it is this.</i>

158. The rule is :—The verb **tha** cannot predicate a definite noun or its equivalent. We can say (1) **Tha e 'na righ** for " He is a king " ; but we cannot say (2) **Tha e an**

righ for "He is the king" No. (2) expresses an absolute and definite identity, an assertion which can only be expressed by **is**.

159. Note another rule :—The verb **is** cannot be followed immediately by either a definite or a proper noun. Usage has determined that in addition to pronouns, only indefinite expressions such as adjectives and indefinite nouns should follow immediately after **is**.

160. In these last examples we have a personal pronoun as the subject. If we have a definite noun or its equivalent as subject, it will be a double subject, as it requires a corresponding personal pronoun to follow **is**. "Malcolm is the king" becomes **Is e Calum an righ**. Observe the introduction of the pronoun in accordance with rule noticed in preceding paragraph.

Is e Iain am fear (<i>fer</i>),	<i>John is the man.</i>
Is iad na fir (<i>fyr</i>) so iad,*	<i>these men are they.</i>
Is e Inbhirnis an t-aithe,	<i>Inverness is the place.</i>
Is i so a' bhean (<i>ven</i>),	<i>this is the woman.</i>
Is e Dia mo bhuachaill,	<i>God is my shepherd.</i>

* Observe the phenomenon of the double pronoun here which is an exact application of the preceding rule; also consider

Is e so e,	<i>this is he.</i>
Is (e) duine math e,	<i>he is a good man.</i>
Is e baile an righ mhoir e,	<i>it is the city of the great king.</i>

161. Notice that in these expressions the pronouns following **is** are not in the emphatic form. These pronouns are merely temporary subjects, and the emphasis caused by **is** is carried on to the words following **is e**, **is i**, or **is iad**. The verb **is** is always in a state of dependence or decay, and has a tendency to become contracted or to vanish altogether; hence we find occasionally **So tigh Sheumais**, instead of **Is e so tigh Sheumais** (par. 464).

162. We must use **is** when both subject and predicate are indefinite nouns, either of which may have an adjective attached. These sentences generally signify species or class. Note that in these sentences the rule is to place an indefinite predicate immediately after the verb, so that we may term them "inverted sentences." A few examples will explain. In saying that "a hen is a bird," we mean that it is of the bird species or class,

Is iasg breac,	<i>a trout is a fish.</i>
Cha'n iasg cearc,	<i>a hen is not a fish.</i>
Is eun cearc,	<i>a hen is a bird.</i>
An eun cearc ?	<i>is a hen a bird ?</i>
Is saor e,	<i>he is a joiner.</i>
An gille fear ?	<i>is a man a boy ?</i>
Is duine mise,	<i>I am a man.</i>
Is la fuar e so,	<i>this is a cold day.</i>

163. Generally we use **is** when an assertion is made which admits of no idea of doubt (or condition as to locality), or when in case of contrast one is selected before others. Hence **is** is used to point out the comparative and superlative of adjectives, because contrast is pointed out with certainty.

164. What has been said of **is** applies of course to its past tense **bu**. A similar remark may be made of **tha** and **bha**.

165. Vocabulary.

Iain (<i>eeün</i>) John.	gual (<i>gooül</i>) nm. coal.
Calum (<i>callüm</i>) Malcolm.	ḁubh (<i>ḁtooh</i>) adj. black.
mathair (<i>ma-ür</i>) mother.	cat (<i>kaht</i>), nm. a cat.
athair (<i>a-ür</i>) father.	mo, m' (<i>mō</i>) my,
saor (<i>sör</i>) nm. a joiner.	righ (<i>ree</i>) nm. a king.
eun (<i>än</i>) nm. a bird.	cearc (<i>kyark</i>) nf. a hen.

166. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. An e so cu ?
2. Is e so cu.
3. Is e sin cat.
4. Is e sin gual.
5. Nach dubh gual ?
6. Is e gual.
7. C'aite am bheil an gual ?
8. Is tusa Calum.
9. An e so Iain ?
10. Is e.
11. Am bheil e 'na fear ?
12. Tha.
13. Bu mhise an gille ?
14. Is e Calum an tuathanach.
15. Nach ciobair e ?
16. An e saor e ?
17. Is e.
18. Am fear gille ?
19. Is i mo mhathair agus is e m' athair.
20. Is i so a' chearc.
21. An eun cearc ?
22. Is e.
23. Is fuar an la so.
24. Cha bu tu an saor.
25. Nach bu chearc i ?
26. Ged nach cearc e is eun e.
27. Is e so an righ.
28. Is mise an righ.

167. Now translate into Gaelic :—

1. Though it is a dog it is swift.
2. Is a trout a fish ?
3. A bird is not a fish.
4. A hen is a bird.
5. This is a hen.
6. That is a cat.
7. Yonder is a dog.
8. It was the boy who was here.
9. Is this the boy ?
10. That is John.
11. Is it not Malcolm ?
12. If it was the boy who was here last night he is not lame.
13. I am the man.
14. You are not the man.
15. He was the boy.
16. Was it not the hen that he had ?
17. It was not the boy who was here.
18. John is a man.
19. A trout is a fish.
20. That is the king.
21. This is the man.
22. These are the horses.
23. John is the king.
24. Is this coal ?
25. Is not coal black ?

LESSON XVIII.

APPLICATION OF **is** AND **bi**.

168. As there is a peculiar distinction in the application of these two verbs **is** and **tha**, a few more examples will be helpful.

169. As we have seen in previous exercises, we must examine carefully a sentence containing any part of the verb "to be" before we translate. We have given examples where the verb **is** MUST be used and the verb **tha** cannot be used. In some of the sentences we had in the earlier exercises, where we used **tha** we can also use **is**, but with a slightly different meaning, as we hope to illustrate by example.

170. An indefinite noun or adjective in predicate.

Tha e 'na fhear,	<i>he is a man (in his man).</i>
Tha an la fuar,	<i>the day is cold.</i>

Now we can also use the verb **is** here, and say **is fear e, is fuar an la**. Notice that up to this the order of the words in our Gaelic sentence has been (1) verb, (2) nominative case, and (3) predicate, which may be a noun, adjective, or a phrase which followed the English verb. When we use **is** this order is changed, and we always have the predicate when it is an indefinite noun or an adjective coming immediately after **is**, and uniting with it in making an assertion. We cannot say **is e fear**, because **fear** is an indefinite noun predicate, and according to rules comes immediately after **is**.

171. The position of the adjective modifies the sense and structure of the sentence, as in the following example:—

Is fuar an la so,	<i>this day is cold.</i>
Is la fuar e so,	<i>this is a cold day.</i>

This last example is somewhat analogous to what is sometimes heard in English, "'Tis a cold day this."

172. We have shown that **tha** means "is now"; it also implies a state, quality, condition, or location, and **is** means "is always," implying kind, species, impression, and comparison. Thus if you say to me **is fear e**, your assertion

means to me that "he is a man" = "he is a real man," every inch a man, not a woman, an animal, or a coward. If we see a figure approaching, and you tell me **is fear e** as soon it is made out that it is a man, you will use **is fear e** correctly. But if you say **tha e 'na fhear** "he is a man" = "he is in his man," here I take you to mean a very different thing, that "he is now a man," no longer a boy, having grown up to be a man, and is now in his quality of "manhood." **Tha e 'na mhinistear**, "he is a minister," means that he is now a minister, after his studying he has become "a minister" and "is now" in his quality of minister.

173. All this is very important, because if there is any idea of a change of state in the mind, we cannot use **is**. If we wish to convey the idea that a person or thing has become what he (or it) is, and that he or it was not always so, we must use the verb **tha**. And the verb **tha** must in such construction be always followed by the preposition **ann** and a suitable possessive pronoun, as **tha e 'na fhear**, "he is in his man(hood)" (Lesson xxxv.)

On the other hand the preposition **ann** is not necessary when the predicate is an adjective, as, **tha e fuar**, "he is cold," for the simple reason that the adjective itself denotes posture and local condition equivalent to an adverbial phrase, "Cold = in cold."

Tha + PREPOSITION + NOUN.

174. Whenever in English the verb "to be" is followed by a preposition **tha** is the verb to use. This follows from the nature of the prepositions, for when we say a thing or someone is "at a place," "on a place," "from a place," etc., "is" always means "is now," or has reference to a state or condition. Again, when we talk about the weather or any thing that is changeable, "is cold," "hot," etc., we mean that it "is now" hot, cold, etc., and use **tha**.

175.

Vocabulary.

bronach adj. sad.
ard (*ardt*) adj. tall, high.
laidir (*lâ tch úr*) adj. strong.

EXERCISE.

176. Use the verb **is** and **bu** in the following sentences in place of **tha**, and translate both sentences.

1. Tha e 'na fhear. 2. Tha an la fuar. 3. Tha mi 'nam shaor. 4. Tha thu bronach. 5. An robh an la fuar? 6. Cha n'eil an la fuar.
7. Am bheil thu bronach? 8. Tha am fear fliuch. 9. Tha mi sgith.
10. Tha an gille ard ach cha n' eil e laidir. 11. Bha na h-eich so sgith.
12. Nach 'eil mi crubach. 13. Ged nach robh thu leisg. 14. Mur an robh mi samhach. 15. Nach robh thu treun?

LESSON XIX

is AND **tha** IN QUESTION AND ANSWER.

177. When asking a question thus: we use **tha**

De tha so? *what is this?* Co tha sin? *who is that?*

When a statement would be made in answer to these questions or in answer to the question, **an e so?** "is it this," we use the verb **is**.

Is e so cu, *this is a dog.* Is e sin Calum, *that is Malcolm.*

When a question has been asked by using one of the dependent verbs **bheil** or **robh**, the answer must be made with the independent forms **tha** or **bha** or the negative **cha'n eil** or **cha robh**.

Am bheil thu a' dol?	<i>are you going?</i>	Tha,	<i>I am = yes.</i>
		Cha'n eil,	<i>I am not = no.</i>
An robh thu sgith?	<i>were you tired?</i>	Bha,	<i>I was = yes.</i>
		Cha robh,	<i>I was not = no.</i>

178. When answering "yes" or "no" to questions asked by the verb **is**, or by any of the particles which have the force of this verb but do not suffer it to be expressed, we use the verb **is** to reply, supported by the predicate of the questioning sentence repeated in the answer; the verb **is** cannot stand alone as **tha** does; it must always be supported by a pronoun.

An e so?	<i>is it this?</i>	Is e sin,	<i>it is that = yes.</i>
An e an duine?	<i>is he the man?</i>	Is e,	<i>he is = yes.</i>
		Cha'n e,	<i>he is not = no.</i>
Co e?	<i>who is he?</i>	Is e Calum,	<i>he is Malcolm.</i>
An e clachair a tha annad?		Is e,	<i>I am = yes.</i>
	<i>are you a mason?</i>	Cha'n e,	<i>I am not = no.</i>
Nach e Seumas a tha ann?		Is e,	<i>It is = yes.</i>
	<i>isn't that James?</i>	Cha'n e,	<i>it is not = no.</i>

179. **Seadh (is + eadh)** = "that's it" or "'tis so."

We have already illustrated **tha** and **cha'n eil**, and **is e** and **cha'n e** as the common answers equivalent to "yes" and "no" in English. There is, however, another question form taking for answer **seadh** (*shögh*) "it is so" and **cha'n eadh** "it is not so." The question is usually made by the interrogative negative **nach?** "is not?" followed by an adjective. This pronoun **eadh** is a survival of an old neuter form.

Nach milis am bainne so ? <i>is this milk not sweet ?</i>	seadh <i>it is so = yes.</i>
Nach fliuch an la a tha ann ? <i>isn't it a wet day ?</i>	cha'n eadh <i>it is not so = no.</i>
Nach fearail e ? <i>isn't he manly ?</i>	seadh <i>it is so = yes.</i>
Nach modhail sin ? <i>isn't that polite ?</i>	cha'n eadh <i>it is not so = no.</i>
Is fearail an duine e.	seadh, cha'n eadh.
<i>manly the man he is.</i>	seadh, <i>he is.</i>
	cha'n eadh <i>he is not.</i>

THE VERB **is** WITH THE PARTICLE **ann**.

180. The combination of the verb **is** with the particle **ann** gives us a decisive emphatic form, an emphasis which is not conveyed by the English translation. The verb **is** emphasises the words immediately following it; combined with **ann** it is rendered still more emphatic. **Is ann** is generally used to express indignation, surprise, or impression. **Is ann** may be literally translated "it is" "there is," "it has happened," "occurred."

Is ann air an duthaich a thainig an da la,	<i>what a change has come over the country.</i>
Is ann mar sin a bha e,	<i>it happened thus (like that).</i>
Is ann leis a thig iad,	<i>it is with him they will come.</i>
B' ann mar sin a thachair,	<i>it was in that way things happened</i>
Is ann aige tha fios,	<i>it is he who knows.</i>
B' ann as an aite sin a thainig e	<i>he came from that place.</i>
Is ann gu bronach a tha e,	<i>he is very sorrowful.</i>
Is ann daibh is aithne bualadh,	<i>they know how to thresh.</i>
Is ann an sin a bhitheas sinn,	<i>it is indeed there we shall be.</i>
An aite seasamh is ann a theich iad,	<i>instead of standing they fled. (lit. in place of standing keeping their ground, it happened they fled.)</i>
B' ann air eiginn a thair e as,	<i>it was with difficulty he got off (lit. there was or it occurred that by difficulty he came out of it or escaped).</i>
Is ann uaithe so a tha e tachairt,	<i>thus it happens (lit. it is from him thus that it is happening)</i>

It will be observed that **is ann** is most frequently used

before adverbs or adverbial phrases or clauses. The idioms are difficult in some of the examples shown, too difficult to be introduced at this stage.

181. *Vocabulary.*

trom adj. (*trown*) heavy.

loch nm. (*lawch*) a loch.

teine nf. (*tchānū*) a fire.

idir adv. (*y tch ūr*) at all.

bainne nm. (*bpan-nyü*) milk.

clachair nm. (*clachūr*) a mason

182. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. De tha sin ? 2. Is e sin gual. 3. C'aite am bheil an gual ? 4. Tha an gual anns an teine. 5. Am bheil bàta air an loch ? Tha.
6. C'aite am bheil an gille ? 7. Bha an gille air a' mhonadh leis na coin.
8. Is e so bàta. 9. De tha anns a' bhàta ? 10. Tha na caoraich anns a' bhàta. 11. Is bainne so, nach eadh ? 'seadh. 12. An eadh ?
13. Cha'n eadh idir. 14. Tha an t-uisge trom ann an diugh agus bha e trom an de. 15. Is ann 'na chlachair a tha Iain—nach ann ?
16. Is ann ach is ann 'na shaor a tha Seumas. 17. Is e so am fear.
18. An e an duine ? 19. Is mise an duine. 20. Am mise an gille ?
21. Am bu mhise an gille ? 22. Bu tusa an duine. 23. B'e an gille.

183. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Is he the man ? 2. He is not the man at all. 3. I am the boy.
4. Was I not the boy ? 5. He was the man. 6. Thou art the man.
7. Is not this water ? 8. No, it is milk. 9. It was wet last night and it rains now. 10. They are not heavy showers. 11. It is wet to-day.
12. I am hungry and there is no bread in the house. 13. Had he the fever last night ? Yes. 14. Is John not going home ? Yes. 15. Are you going ? No. 16. Were you tired yesterday ? 17. I was not tired. 18. I would have been tired. 19. Were you the man ? No. 20. Is it this man ? 21. That's he. 22. John was the boy. 23. He wasn't. 24. Is this the bread ? 25. That's not it at all. 26. There is bread on the table. 27. This ! 28. That's it.

LESSON XX.

IDIOMS OF THE VERB **bi**—**is** WITH **le**.

184. We have already seen how "possession" is translated by the verb **tha**, with the prepositional pronouns formed from **aig**, "at." To describe "absolute possession or ownership" we use the verb **is**. "The book is John's" is translated "the book is with John." Here "is with" has the idea of being permanently connected with, as a thing is with the owner, so the verb used is **is** not **tha**. Note also the order of words in the Gaelic sentence when we use the verb **is**. First, the verb, which is followed by the

adjective or noun which in English followed the verb, and last, the nominative case of the English sentence.

185. **Is le Iain e**, "it is John's"; **is le Mairi an leabhar so**, "this book is Mary's"; but in such a sentence as "the book is mine," we do not translate **is le mi an leabhar**, but use a prepositional pronoun formed from **le mi**, which becomes **leam**. The following are the prepositional pronouns formed from **le**, "with."

le mi	becomes	leam	(<i>lem</i>)	with me, mine.
le thu	"	leat	(<i>leh-t</i>)	with thou, thine.
le e	"	leis	(<i>lāsh</i>)	with him, his.
le i	"	leatha	(<i>lehüh</i>)	with her, hers.
le sinn	"	leinn	(<i>lā-yunn</i>)	with us, ours.
le sibh	"	leibh	(<i>lā-yv</i>)	with you, yours.
le iad	"	leotha	(<i>lyo-hü</i>)	with them, theirs.

186. This prepositional pronoun can be used with more emphasis thus:—

is leamsa,	"it is mine"	(it is with me)
is leinne,	"it is ours"	(it is with us).

187. As illustrating the difference in meaning of **aig** and **le**, picture a banker handling his cash and saying—**tha airgid agam ach cha leam fein e**, "I have money, but it is not my own." **Tha agam** shows that the money is in hand; **cha leam**, "not with me," indicates the person's right to it. **An le Seumas an leabhar so?** "Is it with James this book?" = "Does this book belong to James?" **Is leis e**, "It is with him" = "It does"; **Bu leis e**, "It was with him" = "It did."

188. The interrogative possessive pronoun "whose" is translated into Gaelic in the form "whom with," **co leis**, as:—**co leis an leabhar so?** "whose is this book" (idiomatic—whom with the book this) **leamsa**, "with myself = mine." **Co** with a pronoun asks a question without the verb **is** being expressed, **co e?** "who is he?"; **Co iad?** "who are they?" (par. 456).

189. *Vocabulary.*

reic (<i>rāchk</i>) sold.	abhag (<i>āvük</i>) a terrier.
cheannaich (<i>chyannych</i>) bought.	im ur (<i>eem oor</i>) fresh butter.
im sailte (<i>eem sältchü</i>) salt butter.	
clach (<i>klach</i>) nf. a stone.	mor (<i>mōr</i>) big, large, great.

190. Read in Gaelic and translate the following :—

1. Bu duine math e. 2. Am b'e an duine ? 3. Is e an duine. 4. Co tha so ? 5. Is e so Seumas. 6. De tha sin ? 7. Is e sin cu. 8. Is e so an t-each. 9. C'aite am bheil an cu ? 10. Tha an cu aig an dorus. 11. Am bheil an t-im ur ? 12. Cha'n eil. 13. De tha so ? 14. Is e so lion. 15. Co tha sin ? 16. Bha e 'na shaighdear. 17. An e an cu ? 18. Cha'n e. 19. Is e so an abhag. 20. Bu fhear og Seumas. 21. Tha fios agam. 22. Co leis an leabhar so ? 23. Is mise do mhac agus is tusa m'athair. 24. An iad so an rìgh agus m'athair. 25. An tusa fear an tìghe ? 26. Is mise e. 27. Is mise a tha tinn. 28. Tha an la fuar. 29. Is leig am fear e. 30. Is trom a' chlach i. 31. Co leis an t-aite ? 32. Is fearr am fear thusa, a Sheumais. 33. C'aite an robh e ? 34. Bha e anns a' bhaile an raoir. 35. An robh fios agad air sin ? 36. Co thu ? 37. Cha'n eil acras orm. 38. Am bheil im saillte agad ?

191. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Have you a book ? 2. Yes. 3. Is this it ? 4. No, this book is the girl's ; that is mine. 5. Whose boat is that ? 6. Is it the fisherman's ? 7. No, it was his last year, but he sold it, and it is the shepherd's now. 8. Has the fisherman not a boat ? 9. Not just now, but he will have one presently. 10. Is this book not John's ? 11. No, it is James'. 12. How do you know ? 13. I am not certain. 14. James, is this book yours ? 15. Yes. 16. Is this dog yours ? 17. No, I have a black terrier. 18. That is not mine. 19. Where is yours ? 20. It is at home. 21. Is it a big dog ? No. 22. Where did you get it ? 23. I bought it last year. 24. Have you it now ? 25. Yes. 26. Is this fresh butter ? 27. No, it is salt butter. 28. Is there any bread ? 29. There is bread on the table. 30. Have you the money ? 31. Yes, it is here. 32. Thank you.

LESSON XXI.

THE VERB **bi** AND THE COMPOUND TENSES OF ALL VERBS.

192. With the exception of the verb* **bi**, no Gaelic verb has a present time tense.† The present tense of all Gaelic verbs is composed of the verb **bi** and a verbal noun which is translated by the English present participle. A com-

* Many of the future forms of both regular and irregular verbs might be used for present time, but particularly the verb **chi** " I see " or " will see "—**chi mi sin** I see that (par 513).

† In English, the regular verb has only two different forms to express time, thus **I love, I loved** ; all the other tenses are formed with the help of auxiliaries.

present, past, or future, active or passive.

193. These compound tenses are formed thus—"She sings a song" becomes in Gaelic idiom "she is at the singing of a song," **Tha i a' seinn orain.**

194. When used in the present, to express an action progressing, as "singing," "going," "running," etc., the verbal noun is preceded by **ag**, "at," the **g** of which is dropped before all consonants, except in the case of **radh** and retained before all vowels, as:—**ag radh** (*üg ra*), "saying" **a' dol** (*ü dawl*), "going"; **ag iarraidh** (*üg keer-y*), "asking."

195. When used in the past to express a completed action, as—"sung," "spoken," etc., the verbal noun is preceded by the preposition **air**, "after," and thus the sentence, "she has sung a song" becomes in this Gaelic idiom "she is after the singing of a song," **tha i air seinn orain.**

196. When a noun follows these participles or verbal nouns it is put in the genitive case. **Orain** here is the genitive case of **oran**, and means "of a song." "Of" coming between two nouns is not translated, the inflection of the genitive noun is a sufficient indication.

197. Thus a whole series of compound tenses of an active signification may be formed by the use of the verbal noun, preceded by the prepositions **ag** and **air** and the verb **bi** in all its inflections, as:—

Tha e a' dol dachaidh,	<i>he is going home.</i>
Tha e air dol dachaidh,	<i>he has gone home (he is after going home).</i>
Bha e a' dol dachaidh,	<i>he was going home.</i>
Bha e air dol dachaidh,	<i>he had gone home (he was after going home).</i>
Bhitheadh e a' dol dachaidh,	<i>he would be going home.</i>
Bhitheadh e air dol dachaidh,	<i>he would have gone home.</i>
Bithidh e a' dol dachaidh,	<i>he will be going home.</i>
Bithidh e air dol dachaidh,	<i>he will have gone home.</i>
Bitheam a' dol dachaidh,	<i>let me go home.</i>
Am bheil e a' dol dachaidh ?	<i>is he going home ?</i>
Cha'n eil e a' dol dachaidh,	<i>he is not going home.</i>

198. When the personal pronoun is the object of a progressive participle in English, as "he is striking me";

it is translated by a combination of the corresponding possessive pronoun and the preposition. Such combinations may be called prepositional possessives.

199. Thus, the possessive pronouns **mo, do, a, ar, ur, an,** or **am,** along with the preposition **aig** "at" give us

'gam, 'gad, 'ga, 'gar, 'gur, 'gan,
at my. at thy. at his, at our. at your. at their.

200. Thus we have "he is striking," **tha e a' bualadh**; but "he is striking me" i.e., "he is at the striking of me" **tha e 'gam bhualadh*** (he is at my striking). "He is breaking stones," "he is at the breaking of stones," **tha e a' bristeadh chlach**; but "he is breaking them," **tha e 'gam bristeadh** (he is at their breaking)

201. These possessives along with the preposition **ann** "in," give :—

am, ad, 'na, 'nar, 'nur, 'nan,
in my. in thy. in his. in our. in your. in their.

Ann is used to denote a state or condition :—

Bha mi am* shuidhe,	<i>I was sitting (I was in my sitting).</i>
Tha e 'na laighe,	<i>he is lying down (in his lying down).</i>
Bha na fir 'nan suidhe,	<i>the men were sitting.</i>
Tha e 'na *dhuine,	<i>he is a man (lit. in his man).</i>

202. In the same relation and in the same order of construction, the preposition **air** is used to express a completed action; and **gu** (contracted **g'**) to express a purpose.

Tha e air mo bhualadh,	<i>he has struck me (he is after my striking).</i>
Bha an tuathanach air a bhualadh,	<i>the farmer had struck it.</i>
Chaidh e gu m' *bhualadh,	<i>he went to strike me.</i>
Thog e lamh g'am bualadh,	<i>he raised a hand to strike them.</i>

203. When the possessive pronoun or prepositional pronoun preceding a verbal noun agrees with its nominative noun or pronoun in person and number, the sentence assumes a passive signification.

* The possessive pronouns which aspirate their nouns when used in their simple form aspirate in these combinations also. (par. 409).

Bha e a' togail na cloiche,	<i>he was lifting the stone.</i>
Bha a' chlach 'ga togail,	<i>(the stone was at its lifting), the stone was being lifted.</i>
Bha e 'gam bhualadh.	<i>(he was at my striking), he was striking me.</i>
Bha mi 'gam bhualadh,	<i>(I was at my striking), I was being struck.</i>

204.

EXERCISES.

Vocabulary.

bristeadh (<i>bpreestchūgh</i>), breaking.	ceannach (<i>hyannüch</i>) buying.
breabadh (<i>bprāpūgh</i>) † kicking.	an eich (<i>un äch</i>) of the horse.
bualadh (<i>boosalūgh</i>) striking.	a' choin (<i>ü choyn</i>) of the dog.
reic (<i>rāchk</i>) selling.	leis a' ghille (<i>läsh ü yillü</i>) by the boy.
togail (<i>tokül</i>) lifting.	
a' charbad-iarruinn (<i>ü charapüt eëürynn</i>) the train.	

205. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Tha e air dol dachaidh. 2. Bha an uinneag air a bristeadh leis a ghille. 3. Am bheil e a' dol an sin? 4. Cha'n eil. 5. Tha e a' tighinn an so. 6. Am bheil thu a' dol a nis? 7. Tha an gille a' breabadh an eich. 8. Bha am fear a' bualadh a' choin. 9. Am bheil a' charbad iarruinn a' dol a *dh'fhalbh? (*to go*). 10. Cha'n eil fios agam. 11. Nach robh e air falbh an raoir? 12. Tha nui a' ceannach na caorach sin. 13. Am bheil thu air reic a' choin? 14. Tha mi air seinn orain. 15. Bithidh e a' seinn oran air an fheasgar so. 16. Tha e 'na laighe¹ a nis. 17. Thog mi mo lamh² g'a bhualadh. 18. Bha e 'gam bhualadh. 19. Bha an tuathanach air a bhualadh.

206. Translate English into Gaelic :—

1. I have bought these sheep this afternoon. 2. Have you bought the dog to-day also? 3. No. I had bought it last night. 4. Are you going home now? 5. I am going to the train immediately. 6. When are you going home? 7. I am selling these sheep to-day and I will be home to-night. 8. Has the train not gone away now? 9. No, but it is going presently. 10. Has the boy broken that window? 11. I do not know. 12. The window was broken last night. 13. The boy had struck the horse this morning. 14. It had kicked the dog yesterday. 15. I was lifting the stone. 16. The stone was being lifted by the boy.

* Pron : *ü ghall-äv.* ¹ *lla yü.* ² *lläv.*

† *a + dh* or *gh*. In the case of *adh* or *agh*, after the sound of *a* = modified *ö* the *dh* or *gh* comes in very much like the momentary sound of a teaspoonful of gargle in the throat—a gargle sound.

LESSON XXII.

THE ARTICLE.

207. There is no indefinite article in Gaelic :—

duine, " a man." **daoine**, " men."

Notice that the indefinite article is also omitted in the English plural, where the absence of the " a " or any form of it serves exactly the same purpose as the presence of it in the singular.*

208. THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

In English we say :—" the man " ; plural, " the men. "

In Gaelic we say :—**an duine** ; plural, **na daoine**.

an and **na** we may call the primary forms of the article. It is declined for gender, number and case as follows :—

	<i>masc. sing.</i>	<i>fem. sing.</i>	<i>plural.</i>	
<i>Nom.</i>	an, am, an t- ,	an, a', an t- ,	na	" the "
<i>Gen.</i>	an, a', an t- ,	na, na h- ,	nan, nam	" of the "
<i>Dat.</i>	an, a', an t- ,	an, a', an t- ,	na	" (to) the "

209. The **n** of the article becomes **m** before nouns with initial **b f m** and **p** as—**am fear**, " the man " ; **am bàta**, " the boat " ; **am maireach**, " to-morrow. "

210. The article causes aspiration in certain cases. The **n** then drops out and its elision is marked by an apostrophe ('), as :—**a' bhean**, " the wife " ; **a' ghille**, " of the boy. "

211. When the article follows a preposition ending in a vowel it is the **a** that is dropped and its place taken by an apostrophe (') as—**do 'n rìgh**, " to the king " ; **o'n tigh**, " from the house. " In cases where the **n** would be dropped before an aspiration, and the **a** after a preceding vowel, the **n** is retained and the **a** is dropped, as—**do'n mhac**, " to the son. "

* The absence of the indefinite article in Gaelic is not unique ; in other languages, notably Greek, there is no indefinite article ; French plurals all require an article ; but Latin again has no articles at all. The Latin **filius viri** may mean " a son of a man, " " a son of the man, " " the son of a man, " or " the son of the man. "

212. In translating the English possessive case noun we use in Gaelic the noun in the genitive. This genitive noun, in which "of" is an understood component part, comes after the noun it qualifies and defines. The qualifying genitive noun only can take the article before it, even though both nouns may have a definite signification. When a possessive pronoun is used before the qualifying noun, the definite article is excluded altogether. The absence of an article from either noun in Gaelic does not signify that both nouns are indefinite (see example 3).* A definite compound noun takes the article before the first element of the compound (par. 298, 9).

lamh a' ghille,	<i>the hand of the boy</i>	<i>the boy's hand.</i>
lamh mo ghille,	<i>the hand of my boy,</i>	<i>my boy's hand.</i>
lamh gille,	<i>the hand of a boy,</i>	<i>a boy's hand.</i>
solus-greine,	<i>sunlight,</i>	<i>sunlight.</i>
solus na greine,	<i>the light of the sun,</i>	<i>the sun's light.</i>
an solus greine,	<i>the light of the sun,</i>	<i>the sunlight.</i>

213. If an adjective simple or qualified precedes the noun, the article is placed before the adjective. The article so placed is subject to all the modifications, and aspirates the adjective as it would a noun beginning with the same letters.

An droch dhuine,	<i>the bad man.</i>
am fìor dhroch dhuine,	<i>the truly bad man.</i>

214. The article is used before a noun when followed by the demonstrative pronouns **so**, **sin**, **ud**: **an tigh so**, "this house"; **an cnoc ud**, "yonder hill"; when the noun is preceded by **is** and **bu**, and an adjective: **is math an t-each e** "he is a (the) good horse"; and between the interrogatives, **co**, **cia**, **ciod**, and the noun: **co am fear?** "what man?" (*lit.*: who (is) the man).

215. The article is frequently used before abstract nouns, and nouns which represent their class or kind; as **an leisg**,

* I have stated it in this way, as it is more correct than to say, like Gillies and others, "that one noun governs another in the genitive." Whose "hand"? the "boy's" hand; it might be anyone's hand, and so we qualify and govern the noun "hand" by "boy's" instead of the reverse being the case. A compound illustrates this point even more so (par. 295). It is incorrect to say as Gillies does that both nouns are indefinite in the absence of any article (Gillies 179).

“laziness”; **an duine**, “man” (signifying mankind); before names of certain countries; as **an Eadailt**, “Italy”; **an Roinn-Eórpa**, “Europe”; **an Fhraing**, “France”; **Eachdraidh na h-Alba**, “History of Scotland.”

216. As the vagaries of the article are many, we will, in order to fully describe and illustrate all its combinations, decline it with the noun. As already shown, the article changes according to case, number, gender, and the initial letter of the noun which it qualifies. We will divide the nouns into four groups in order to illustrate all these changes.

Group 1.—All nouns beginning with **d, t; l, n, r; sg, sm, st, sp.**

Group 2.—All nouns beginning with **b, c, g, f, m,** or **p.**

Group 3.—All nouns beginning with **s** followed by **l, n, r,** or **s** followed by a vowel.

Group 4.—All nouns beginning with a vowel.

217. THE ARTICLE FOR NOUNS IN GROUP 1.

All nouns beginning with **d, t, l, n, r; sg, sm, st,** or **sp.**

In this group no alteration or addition is made, and the article remains in its primary form. The final lingual **n** of the article prevents aspiration of initial **d** or **t** of a noun or adjective immediately following it; the lingual termination and dental initial letters blending into each other naturally. Initial **l n r** never show aspiration in any position (pars. 21, 38).

	ramh (m) an oar.	spog (f) a claw.
N.	an ramh, the oar.	an spog, the claw.
G.	an raimh, of the oar.	na spoige, of the claw.
D.	an ramh, the oar.	an spoig, the claw.
N.	na raimh, the oars.	na spogan, the claws.
G.	nan ramh, of the oars.	nan spog, of the claws.
D.	na raimh, the oars.	na spogan, the claws.

218. THE ARTICLE FOR NOUNS IN GROUP 2.

Nouns beginning with **b f m p** and **c** and **g.** Masculine nouns in this group aspirate in the genitive and dative singular; feminine nouns aspirate in the nominative and dative singular. The **n** of the article drops out before the aspirated consonant in these cases and an apostrophe takes its place ('). Before **c** and **g** in the nominative singular

masculine and the genitive plural the article **an** and **nan** is pronounced with a **g** sound attached to it, as—**an cu** (*ung-koo*) the dog; **nan gleann** (*nung-glaunn*) of the glens.

	gille (m) a boy.	clach (f) a stone.	bard (m) a poet.	poit (f) a pot.
N.	an gille.	a' chlach.	am bard.	a' phoit.
G.	a' ghille.	na cloiche.	a' bhaird.	na poite.
D.	a' ghille.	a' chloich.	a' bhaid.	a' phoit.
N.	na gillean.	na clachan.	na baird.	na poitean.
G.	nan gillean.	nan clach.	nam bard.	nam poit.
D.	na gillean.	na clachan.	na baird.	na poitean or poitibh.

Observe that in the nominative singular masculine and in the genitive plural, both masculine and feminine, the **n** of the article changes to **m** before **b f m** and **p**.

219. In nouns beginning with **f**, both mas. and fem., the article **an** is retained in full before aspiration as the **fh** which follows is silent and thus there is no harsh sound to break down, **an fhras**, pronounced *un rass*.

	fear (m) a man.	fras (f) a shower.
N.	am fear, the man.	an fhras, the shower.
G.	an fhir, of the man.	na froise, of the shower.
D.	an fhear, the man.	an fhrois, the shower.
N.	na fir, the men.	na frasán, the showers.
G.	nam fear, of the men.	nam fras, of the showers.
D.	na fir, the men.	na frasán, the showers.

220. THE ARTICLE FOR NOUNS IN GROUP 3.

Nouns beginning with **sl**, **sn**, **sr**, or **s**, when followed by a vowel. Nouns in this group add a **t**- in the genitive and dative singular masculine, and in the nominative and dative singular feminine. No change in the article takes place in the plural. The **s** is always silent after **an t**-.

	sruth (m) a stream.	slat (f) a rod.
N.	an sruth, the stream.	an t-slat, the rod.
G.	an t-srutha, of the stream.	na slaité, of the rod.
D.	an t-sruth, the stream.	an t-slait, the rod.
N.	na sruthan, the streams.	na slatan, the rods.
G.	nan sruth, of the streams.	nan slat, of the rods.
D.	na sruthan, the streams.	na slatan, the rods.

221. THE ARTICLE FOR NOUNS IN GROUP 4.

All nouns beginning with a vowel. Masculine nouns in this group add a **t**- in the nominative singular; feminine

nouns take an **h-** in the genitive singular ; and nouns of both genders take an **h-** in the nominative and dative plural.

	athair (m), a father.		abhainn (f), a river.
N.	an t-athair , the father.	an abhainn , the river.	
G.	an athar , of the father.	na h-aibhne , of the river.	
D.	an athair , the father.	an abhainn , the river.	
N.	na h-aithrichean , the fathers,	na h-abhnichean , the rivers.	
G.	nan athair , of the fathers.	nan abhainn , of the rivers.	
D.	na h-aithrichean , the fathers.	na h-aibhnichean , the rivers.	

222. In declining the dative case, always say **air a' ghille** or **do 'n ghille**, "on the boy" or "to the boy," **do na gillean**, "to the boys," and so on for the other nouns. The dative case always requires a preposition before it, as it expresses no terminational variety of meaning in either number without it ; any other simple preposition may be used, as : **aig, as, de, fo, mu, o**, etc. (par. 594).

223. QUESTIONS ON THE ARTICLE.

If you can answer the following questions correctly it will be a guide as to whether you have understood the different forms of the article. The answers are to be found in the preceding two pages, but we will give a further definitive answer in the key.

1. Why is **abhainn** with the article not written **an t-abhainn** ?
2. Why is **bard** with the article not written **an bard** ?
3. Why is **an duine** written and not **a' dhuine** ?
4. Why **a' chlach** and not **an clach** ?
5. Why **an saoghal** and not **an t-saoghal** ?
6. Why **an spog** and not **an t-spog** ?
7. How do we translate into Gaelic the indefinite article " a " or " an " before an English noun ?
8. How do we translate " of a father," " to a father," " on a father."

224. EXERCISE ON THE ARTICLE.

Apply the Article to the following nouns :—

ann am bàta, in a boat.
bàta, m. (*bpatü*), a boat.
bean, f. (*pen*), a wife.
bord, m. (*bawrd*), a table.
buid (*boord*), of a table.
long, f. (*lonk*), a ship.
luinge (*looyngü*), of a ship.

saoir m. (*söyr*), of a joiner.
leabhar, m. (*llyo-ür*), a book.
bruachan (*bprooückün*), banks.
each, m. (*äch*), a horse.
fiadh, m. (*feeügh*), a deer.
eich (*äeech*), horses.
feidh (*fä-y*), of a deer.

ord, m. (*awrd*), a hammer.
uird (*oorich*), of a hammer.
lorg, f. (*lorük*), a track.
luirge (*loorkü*), of a track.
mac, m. (*machk*), a son.
mic (*meechk*), of a son.
fear, m. (*fer*), a man.
fir (*fyr*), of a man.
air creig (*är kräg*), on a rock.
slat, f. (*sllaht*), a rod.
slaithe (*slätchü*), of a rod.
slatan (*slätün*), rods.
le slait (*le slätch*), with a rod.
cu, m. (*koo*), a dog.
air cat (*är cäht*), on a cat.
facal, m. (*fächkü*), a word.
taobh, m. (*töv*), a side.
lamh caileige (*läv kalläkü*), a girl's hand (the hand of a girl).
ceann eich (*keewän äch*), the head of a horse (a horse's head).
ceann circe (*keewän keer-kü*), a hen's head (the head of a hen).
casan gille (*kassün keel-ü*), a boy's feet (the feet of a boy).
casan fhiadh (*kassün eeuigh*), the feet of deer.
bun craoibhe (*poon kröyvü*), a root of a tree.

cas, f. (*käss*), a foot.
air cois (*är koysh*), on a foot.
do righ (*dio ree*), to a king.
air luing (*är looynkü*), on a ship.
air craobhan (*är krövün*), on trees.
muice, f. (*mooychkü*), of a pig.
iasg, m. (*eeusk*), a fish.
eisg (*äshk*), fishes.
lamh, f. (*lläv*), a hand.
laimhe (*lläyvü*), of a hand.
sgian, f. (*skeeün*), a knife.
sruth, m. (*sroo*), of a stream.
srutha (*srooü*), of a stream.
air sruth, on a stream.
le laimh (*le llayv*), with a hand.
eun, m. (*än*), a bird.
eoin (*yoin*), birds.

225.

Vocabulary.

geur (*käür*), sharp.
tapaiddh (*tahpy*), clever.

a' seinn (*ü shäynn*), singing
raimh (*ra-yv*), oars.

226. Correct the article, etc., in the following sentences, read and translate :—

1. Bha an lamh a' chaileige dubh.
2. Cha robh am gille laidir.
3. Bha na gille fliuch.
4. Cha 'n eil an bàta air an cuan, tha e air an sruth.
5. Cha 'n eil a' ghille an so fathast, ach tha an caileag.
6. Tha an ceann an t-eich dubh.
7. Tha an ord an fir sin trom.
8. Tha an ceann a' ord trom.
9. Cha 'n eil na gillean anns am baile.

227. Translate the following into Gaelic :—

1. The son of the joiner is very clever.
2. Have you the rods.
3. No, the shepherd has them.
4. The book of the boy is on the table.
5. The father of the girl is at the town.
6. He was at the house of the fisherman.
7. Have you been at the house of the shepherd?
8. Do you know where the boy's knife is? (the knife of the boy).
9. If it is not at home it is lost.
10. The men in the boat have the oars.
11. Do you know where they are?
12. The men had them last night.
13. Were they singing on the river last night?
14. The birds were singing in the trees on the banks of the river.
15. Who was King of Scotland?
16. The boy's knife was sharp.
17. The man had a boat at the side of the river to-day.
18. I was at the side of a stream last night.

LESSON XXIII.

THE NOUN.

228. There are only two genders in the Gaelic language, the masculine and feminine ; all Gaelic nouns therefore are either masculine or feminine gender. To know and remember the gender of ordinary Gaelic nouns is one of the great difficulties in learning the language, as it is in learning French and many languages. Without this knowledge, which can only be mastered by practice, no one can speak or write Gaelic correctly.

229. There are a few general rules which will very much help the learner to distinguish the gender of nouns ; they are only **general** rules, however, subject to many exceptions ; and where they do not apply, the student must depend on practice and memory.

230. The following nouns are usually masculine :—

- (1) The names of males—**fear**, a man ; **torc**, a boar ; **rioh**, a king.
- (2) The young of all animals regardless of sex—**uan**, a lamb ; **searrach**, a foal.
- (3) Diminutives in **an**—**bordan**, a little table ; **lochan**, a little loch.
- (4) The names of trees, vegetables, grains, liquors, colours, metals, elements, the seasons, and the days of the week—**calltuinn**, hazel ; **cal**, kail ; **leann**, ale ; **iarunn**, iron ; **uisge**, water ; **samhradh**, summer.
- (5) Derivatives in **as**, **ear**, **air**, **iche**, etc. **cairdeas**, friendship ; **taillear**, a tailor ; **piobair**, a piper ; **maraiche**, a seaman ; **marcaich**, a ride ; **oibriche**, a worker ; **aoradh**, worship ; **bualadh**, striking.

231. The following nouns are usually feminine :—

- (1) Names of females—**caileag**, a girl ; **caora**, a sheep ; **muc**, a pig.
- (2) Names of countries—**Alba**, Scotland ; **Eire** or **Eirinn**, Ireland.

- (3) Names of musical instruments, heavenly bodies, diseases—**piob-mhor**, the bag-pipes; **clarsach**, a harp; **reul**, a star; **grian**, a sun; **siataig**, rheumatism; **teasach**, fever.
- (4) Diminutives, etc. in **ag** and **achd**—**duanag**, a little song; **murlag**, a small creel; **morachd**, greatness; **bardachd**, poetry.
- (5) Derivatives in “**e**,” denoting attributes—**doille**, blindness; **buidhre**, deafness.

232. The Gaelic noun has two numbers—singular and plural. Note that after certain numerals the singular is used, as after **aon**, one; **fichead**, twenty; **ciad** or **ceud**, a hundred; **mìle**, a thousand; and any multiple of these. The plural is used after all other numbers.

233. The Gaelic noun has five cases, nominative and accusative, genitive, dative, and vocative. Practically speaking the Gaelic noun has only two forms, some feminines have three.

234. The nominative and accusative (or objective) case are alike in Gaelic. The nominative case is used when any person or thing is mentioned as the subject word of the sentence, or when it is the object word, and is directly governed by the action of the verb. There is no accusative case in Gaelic different from the nominative.

235. The genitive case in Gaelic corresponds to the English possessive case, or to the English noun preceded by the preposition “of.” Thus “a man’s hand” becomes “the hand of a man”; “of a man” being translated by the genitive of “man.” The genitive is generally used as a qualifying and limiting term to and after another noun.

236. The dative case is the case where the noun is governed by a preposition and corresponds to the indirect objective case in English.

237. When the noun represents the person or thing spoken to, we call its case the vocative or the nominative of address. It is usually preceded by the vocative particle **a**, which causes aspiration of all aspirable consonants. (par. 254).

238. The Gaelic noun has been variously divided into declensions. Sometimes in two—a noun whose vowel is broad is said to be of the first declension as—**bard, oran**, etc. A noun whose last vowel is narrow is classed as of the second declension, as—**mir, ceist**, etc.

239. The most general manner of forming the genitive singular of nouns of both these declensions is to insert an **i** before the last broad vowel of the nominative singular, and when this is not done we may say the noun is partly irregular and falls under some of the rules to be given hereafter for the formation of the genitive. The division of the noun into declensions seems unnecessary, as there is scarcely any variation in the manner of declining nouns either in broad or narrow vowels.

240. It will be observed that the various inflections in the genitive singular constitute the principal guide in classification. If different forms of the genitive singular are a sufficient reason for a separate declension, a survey of the various formations of that case as classified in this work will enable the reader to discover at once that no fewer than fifteen declensions should be adopted—a division that would confer no benefit whatever; it will be found that ninety per cent. of the Gaelic nouns follow in some manner the general rule, and that, after forming the genitive singular a close uniformity of flectional formations pervades all the other cases.

241. The general rule for forming the genitive singular of both masculine and feminine nouns is to introduce an **i** after the last broad vowel of the nominative singular, or by leaving out the broad vowel or diphthongal part and substituting **i**. If the last vowel is **i** no change takes place; feminine nouns also add a terminal **e**. Many classes of nouns have special variations in the genitive, on account of their vowel combinations; examples of most of these are declined on the following pages.

242. A noun declined with the definite article we call a definite noun, a noun without the article we call an indefinite noun.

DECLINING THE INDEFINITE NOUN.

243. After forming the genitive a close uniformity of all flecational formations pervades all the other cases of Gaelic nouns. It will be found that in an indefinite masculine noun the nominative, accusative and dative singular are alike ; the genitive plural is usually formed by aspirating the nominative singular ; while the nominative, accusative and dative plural are the same as the genitive singular ; the vocative is like the genitive singular, but aspirated ; and the vocative plural is like the nominative singular and a final **a** added, or like the nominative plural aspirated.

244. In the case of indefinite feminine nouns, the nominative and accusative are alike ; the dative with the omission of the final **e** is the same as the genitive ; the nominative accusative and dative add **an** (and **ean** to correspond to a preceding small vowel) to the nominative singular ; the genitive plural and the vocative singular are like the nominative singular aspirated ; and the vocative plural is like the nominative plural aspirated.

DECLINING THE DEFINITE NOUN.

245. The declension of a noun with the definite article is similar to that without the article. The initial letters of some nouns are aspirated in certain cases, others eclipsed, etc. (Lesson xxii.).

246. A definite noun has no vocative case.

247. A definite noun masculine beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the genitive and dative singular. A definite noun feminine aspirates the nominative, dative, and vocative singular.

248. A definite noun, whether masculine or feminine, beginning with **d, l, n, r, s, t**, aspirates no case.

249. A definite noun, whether masculine or feminine, beginning with a consonant is never aspirated in the plural.

250. As we have already dealt fully with the definite article with the noun, a further two examples will suffice to compare the changes effected by their combination.

251. Any unaspirated case is subject to aspiration after words which cause aspiration, as :—**mo bhord**, “ my table ” ; **mo bhuid**, “ of my table.”

252. EXAMPLES TO ILLUSTRATE THE GENERAL RULE.

AN INDEFINITE MASCULINE NOUN.

	<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	bard, a poet.	baird,	poets.
<i>Gen.</i>	baird, of a poet.	bhard,	of poets.
<i>Dat.</i>	(air) bard on a poet.	(air) baird,	(on) poets.
<i>Acc.</i>	bard, a poet.	baird,	poets.
<i>Voc.</i>	a bhaird, oh! poet!	a bharda,	oh! poets!

WITH THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

<i>Nom.</i>	am bard, the poet.	na baird,	the poets.
<i>Gen.</i>	a' bhaird, of the poet.	nam bard,	of the poets.
<i>Dat.</i>	a' bhaird, the poet.	na baird,	the poets.
<i>Acc.</i>	am bard, the poet.	na baird,	the poets.

253. AN INDEFINITE FEMININE NOUN.

<i>Nom.</i>	brog, a shoe.	brogan,	shoes
<i>Gen.</i>	broige, of a shoe.	bhrog,	of shoes.
<i>Dat.</i>	(air) broig, (on) a shoe.	(air) brogan,	(on) shoes.
<i>Acc.</i>	brog, a shoe.	brogan,	shoes.
<i>Voc.</i>	a bhrog, oh! shoe!	a bhrogan,	oh! shoes!

WITH THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

<i>Nom.</i>	a' bhrog, the shoes.	na brogan,	the shoes.
<i>Gen.</i>	na broige, of the shoes.	nam brog,	of the shoes.
<i>Dat.</i>	a' bhroig, the shoes.	na brogan,	the shoes.
<i>Acc.</i>	a' bhrog, the shoes.	na brogan,	the shoes.

254. The vocative case is the same in the singular of masculine nouns as the genitive aspirated; and in the feminine nouns as the nominative aspirated; and in the plural of all nouns as the nominative plural aspirated, but minus the final **n** where the noun has had a syllable added to it to make the plural. The vocative case is preceded by the sign **a**, which is omitted before a vowel or an **f** aspirated.

255. The old dative plural for a number of nouns, both masculine and feminine, added **ibh** or **aibh** to the nominative singular, and this termination is still used more or less in poetry, or to give touch of dignity to serious writing.

Air bharraibh nam biodag, *on the points of the dirks.*
Fo chasaibh nan namh, *under the feet of the enemies.*

256. There are a few exceptions to all these rules, as in the case of **duine**, "a man," nominative, dative, and genitive are alike; **daoine**, "men," nominative and genitive

plural are also alike ; also **bean**, “ a woman,” an altogether irregular noun, is **mna** in the genitive singular and **bhan** in the genitive plural (par. 282).*

NOUNS DECLINED ACCORDING TO THE GENERAL RULES.

257. Monosyllabic and many other nouns whose vowels are broad (**a o u** or **ua**) form their genitive after the manner of the preceding general rules.

	Laogh m. (<i>llögh</i>), a calf.		Bruach f., a bank.	
<i>Nom.</i>	laogh	laoigh	bruach	bruachan
<i>Gen.</i>	laoigh	laogh	bruaiche	bhruach
<i>Dat.</i>	laogh	laoigh	bruaich	bruachan

Nouns similarly declined.

adag† f. (<i>adtak</i>) a stook.	duan m. (<i>dooün</i>) a poem.
al m. (<i>äl</i>) a brood.	fraoch m. (<i>fröck</i>) heath.
Albannach m (<i>allupanüch</i>) a Scotsman.	glas f. (<i>gklass</i>) a lock.
bàd m. (<i>pàdt</i>) a tuft.	gradh m. (<i>grágh</i>) love.
balach m. (<i>bballüch</i>) a boy.	lamh f. (<i>lláv</i>) a hand.
bàs m. (<i>bás</i>) death.	laoch m. (<i>llöch</i>) a hero.
biodag† f. (<i>bpydtak</i>) a dirk.	lòn m. (<i>lawn</i>) a meadow.
bodach m. (<i>bpodtüch</i>) an old man.	maor m. (<i>mör</i>) an officer.
bonnach m. (<i>bponüch</i>) a bannock.	oglach m. (<i>oklüch</i>) a servant.
cal m. (<i>käl</i>) a cabbage.	ospag† f. (<i>ospak</i>) a sob.
caol m. (<i>köll</i>) a strait.	ramh m. (<i>rháv</i>) an oar.
cat m. (<i>kaht</i>) a cat.	run m. (<i>roon</i>) darling.
clar m. (<i>klar</i>) a plain.	saor m. (<i>sör</i>) a joiner.
cluas f. (<i>klooüs</i>) an ear.	sguab f. (<i>skooüb</i>) a sheaf.
craobh f. (<i>kröv</i>) a tree.	slat f. (<i>sllaht</i>) a rod.
cuan m. (<i>kooün</i>) a sea.	sluagh m. (<i>slooü</i>) people.
cul m. (<i>kooll</i>) a back.	srad f. (<i>srátt</i>) a spark.
dan m. (<i>dtán</i>) a song.	sron f. (<i>sron</i>) a nose.
dorus‡ m. (<i>doriüs</i>) a door.	tarbh m. (<i>tarüv</i>) a bull.
dos m. (<i>tos</i>) a tassel.	tuadh f. (<i>tooü</i>) an axe.
	tur m. (<i>dtoor</i>) a tower.

* The student who only knows the English language thinks the formation of the plurals in that language very simple, yet the varied inflections which characterise the plurals of many common nouns is surprising. Here is a selection only :—man men, foot feet, cow kine, child children, brother brethren, box boxes, ox oxen, arch arches, loch lochs, wife wives, shelf shelves, staff staves, ruff ruffs, fly flies, penny pence, money monies, echo echoes, piano pianos, mouse mice, deer deer, alms alms, news news. In comparison, Gaelic seems much more regular.

† These do not add an **e** in the genitive.

‡ **Dorus** also makes a plural in **dorsan**.

258. Exercises on the foregoing nouns :—

Decline the following with the definite article—

cluas, al, dan, lon, laogh, bruach, maor, tuadh, slat, ospag.

Decline the following without the article—

cat, cuan, gradh, dos, sguab, clar, salm.

259. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Tha Albannach air a' mhonadh.
2. Tha tuadh an t-saoir briste
3. Tha dos air piob a' mhaoir.
4. Tha craobhan anns an lon.
5. Bha an sluagh air seinn an orain.
6. Tha am bàta air cuan.
7. Cha 'n eil a' ghlas air an dorus.
8. Bha glas an doruis briste an raoir
9. Tha brogan a' bhalaich salach.
10. Bha coig tairbh air an fhraoch.
11. Tha an t-acras air a' bhalach.
12. Tha an gille a' seinn dain mu na bruachan.

260. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. A tree is on the hill.
2. The Scotsman is a hero.
3. The oars of the boat are here.
4. A bull is on the plain.
5. A dirk is in the officer's hand.
6. The ears of a cat.
7. A lock is on the door.
8. The lock of the door is broken.
9. The darling of the people is here.
10. I was at the tower on the hill.
11. The boy sang an old man's song.
12. The door of the tower is open.
13. The joiner's axe is sharp.
14. The servant's ear was at the door.
15. The old man's back is dirty.

LESSON XXIV.

THE NOUN. II.

PARTICULAR RULES FOR FORMING THE GENITIVE.

261. A number of nouns in **a** and **o** change these vowels into **ui** in the genitive, and are then declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

carn m. a cairn, heap of stones.		lorg , f. a track.	
<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> carn	cuirn	lorg	lorgan
<i>Gen.</i> cuirn	charn	luirge	lorg
<i>Dat.</i> carn	cuirn	luirg	lorgan

Nouns similarly declined :—

allt , m. (<i>aullt</i>), a brook.	calg , m. (<i>kaluk</i>), a prickle.
balg , m. (<i>bpaluk</i>) a wallet.	car , m. (<i>kar</i>) a turn.
ball , m. (<i>paul</i>) a member.	clag , m. (<i>klak</i>) a bell.
boc , m. (<i>bpochk</i>), a buck.	cnoc , m. (<i>krrochk</i>) a hill.
bord , m. (<i>bawrd</i>), a table.	cord , m. a string.
broc , m. (<i>bprochk</i>), a badger.	crodh , m. (<i>kro</i>) cattle.

falt, m. (*fallt*) hair.
fonn (*fownn*) a tune.
gob m. (*gop*), a bill, a beak
long, f. a ship.
olc, m. (*awlck*), evil.
ord, m. (*awrdt*), a hammer.
port, m. (*porst*), a harbour.

sloc, m. (*slochck*), a pit.
sop, m. a wisp.
spong, m. (*sponck*) a sponge.
toll, m. (*towl*) a hole.
tom, m. (*towm*) a knoll.
tonn, f. (*townn*) a wave.
tromp, f. a trumpet.

262. A number of nouns in **ea** or **io** contract these into **i** in the genitive, and are declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

ceann, m. (*kyaun*) a head.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	ceann	cinn
<i>Gen.</i>	cinn	cheann
<i>Dat.</i>	ceann	cinn

cearc f. (*kyark*) a hen.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
	cearc	cearcan
	circe	chearc
	circ	cearcan

Nouns similarly declined:—

biadh, m. (*bpeeügh*) food.
breac, m. (*prechck*) a trout.
cinneadh, m. (*keennügh*) a clan.
coileach, m. (*koyluch*) a cock.
crioch, f. (*kreeüch*) an end.
fear, m. (*fer*) a man.

gleann, m. (*glaunn*) a glen.
leac, f. (*llechck*) a flagstone.
lion, m. (*lyeen*) a net.
preas, m. (*präs*) a bush.
mac, m. (*machck*) a son.
siol, m. (*sheell*) seed.

263. A number of nouns in **ea**, **eu**, and **ia** change these vowels into **ei** in the genitive, and are then declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

cliabh, m. a basket.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	cliabh	cleibh
<i>Gen.</i>	cleibh	chliabh
<i>Dat.</i>	cliabh	cleibh

grian, f. sun.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
	grian	grianan
	greine	ghrian
	grein	grianan

Nouns similarly declined:—

breug, f. (*bpräk*) a lie.
caileag, f. (*kallük*) a girl.
cairdeas, m. (*karjess*) friendship.
coibhneas, m. (*koyvness*) kindness.
cealg, f. (*kyaluk*) deceit.
ceard, m. (*kyärä*) a tinker.
ceart, m. (*kyärst*) a right.
ceum, m. (*käm*) a step.
ciall, m. (*keeüll*) sense.
cleireach, m. (*kläruch*) a clerk.
coigreach, m. (*koykruch*) a stranger.

creach, f. (*krech*) plunder.
creag, f. (*kräk*) a rock.
dealg, m. (*tchallük*) pin.
each (*äch*) horse.
fearg, f. (*feruk*) anger.
fiadh, m. (*fee-ügh*) a deer.
geug, f. (*gäk*) a branch.
ial, f. (*eeüll*) a thong.
iasg, m. (*eeusk*) a fish.
iteag, f. (*eetchak*) a feather.
neamh, m. (*nyäv*) heaven.
sealg, f. (*shaluk*) hunting.
sliabh, m. (*sleew*) a moor.

264. A number of nouns in **a** change the **a** into **oi** in the genitive, and are then declined through the other cases according to the general rules.

cas, f. (*kass*) a foot.

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	cas	casan
Gen.	coise	chas
Dat.	cois	casan

Nouns similarly declined :—

bas , f. (<i>bass</i>) the palm.	dall , m. (<i>táool</i>) a blind man,
clach , f. (<i>klach</i>) a stone.	fras , f. a shower.
clann , f. (<i>klaunn</i>) children.	gad (<i>gadt</i>), m. a thong.
crann , f. (<i>kraunn</i>) a trunk, tree.	Gall (<i>gáool</i>), m. a Lowlander.

265. A number of nouns of one syllable, both masculine and feminine, add **a** to form the genitive, and add **an** or **annan** to form the plural, and are declined as follows :—

loch, m. (*llawch*) a loch.

	Singular	Plural.
Nom.	loch	lochan
Gen.	locha	loch
Dat.	loch	lochan

Nouns similarly declined :—

ath , f. (<i>áh</i>) a kiln.	buth (<i>boo</i>) a shop.
anam , m. (<i>anám</i>) a soul.	fios , m. (<i>feess</i>) knowledge.
beus , f. (<i>bās</i>) virtue.	piob , f. (<i>peep</i>) a pipe.
cladh , m. (<i>klōgh</i>) a churchyard.	sruth m. (<i>strooh</i>), a stream.
earb , f. (<i>ārūp</i>) a roe.	lagh , f. (<i>llōgh</i>) law.
feum , m. (<i>fām</i>) need.	barr , m. a point.
modh , f. (<i>mogh</i>) a manner.	cath , m. (<i>kah</i>) a battle.
guth , m. (<i>goo</i>) a voice.	dram (<i>dtrām</i>), m. a dram.
cleoc , m. (<i>klyochk</i>) a mantel.	fion , m. (<i>feen</i>) wine.
cnaimh , m. (<i>krāyv</i>) a bone.	luch , f. (<i>llooch</i>) a mouse.

266. A number of nouns in **eu** change these vowels into **eo** in the genitive, and are declined as follows :—

beul, m. (*bpáll*) a month.

	Singular.	Plural.
Nom.	beul	beoil
Gen.	beoil	bheul
Dat.	beul	beoil

Nouns similarly declined :—

deur , m. (<i>tchār</i>) a tear,	neul , m. (<i>nyáll</i>) a cloud.
gleus , m. (<i>glās</i>) order.	sgedul , m. (<i>skáll</i>) a story.
leus , m. (<i>llyās</i>) light.	feur , m. (<i>fār</i>) grass.
eun , m. (<i>ān</i>) a bird,	meur , m. (<i>mār</i>) a finger,

267. A number of nouns ending in **-chd** and **-dh** are indeclinable in the singular, that is all cases are alike, and form their plural in **an**.

beachd, m. (*bechk*) an observation, an opinion.

<i>Sing. N. G. D.</i>	<i>Nom. and Dat. Pl.</i>	<i>Gen. Pl.</i>
beachd	beachdan	bheachd

Nouns similarly declined :—

faidh , m. (<i>fāee</i>) a prophet.	reachd , m. (<i>rāchk</i>) a law, statute.
cleachd , m. (<i>klechk</i>) a habit.	fuachd , m. (<i>foouchk</i>) a cold.
uchd , m. (<i>oochk</i>) a breast.	feachd , m. (<i>fāchk</i>) a host.
beannachd , m. a blessing.	rioghachd f. (<i>ree-achk</i>) a kingdom.

268. A number of nouns whose final vowel is narrow (generally called the second declension), have both masculine and feminine nouns forming their genitive by adding an **e**; and **an (ean)** to form their plural.

mir m. (*meer*) a piece. **sraid** f. (*svādt*) a street.

	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	mir	mirean	sraid	sraidean
<i>Gen.</i>	mire	mhir	sraide	shraid
<i>Dat.</i>	mir	mirean	sraid	sraidean

Nouns similarly declined :—

tir f. (<i>cheer</i>) land.	mionaid , f. (<i>my natch</i>) a minute.
aite , m. (<i>āh-tchü</i>) a place.	tigh, taigh m. (<i>ttāh y</i>) a house.
ceist , f. (<i>keest</i>) a question.	uair f. (<i>ooür</i>) an hour.
im , m. (<i>ym</i>) butter.	cir , f. (<i>keer</i>) a comb.
bíd m. (<i>bpídt</i>) a chirp.	ainm , f. (<i>anām</i>) a name.

269. Nouns of one syllable ending in a vowel are indeclinable in the singular, and to prevent a hiatus, insert a silent **th** before the plural terminations **an** or **ean**.

Singular N. G. and D. **cno** f. (*kro*) a nut.

Plural, Nom. **cnothan** nuts; *Gen.* **chno** of nuts.

Nouns similarly declined :—

seo , m. (<i>kvo</i>) mist.	cliu , m. (<i>klyoo</i>) praise.
clo , m. (<i>kllō</i>) cloth; cloithean	gleo , f. (<i>glyo</i>) a fight.
la , m. (<i>lla</i>) a day.	ni , m. (<i>nny</i>) a thing.

270. Decline as definite nouns, giving gender and translation, the following :—

calg, tromp, balg, tom, ceann, lion, mac, gleann, mir, bord.

271. Decline the following similarly, but as indefinite nouns :—

calg, clann, ord, crodh, long, cnoc, caileag, im, cir, sraid.

272. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Bha am fear anns an t-sraid. 2. Bha coig bric ann an lion an fhir ud.
3. Tha an t-ord air a' bhord. 4. Bha am broc anns an toll air a' chnoc. 5. Tha long mhor anns a' phort. 6. Tha an coigreach a' sealg fhiadh air an t-sliabh. 7. Tha an t-each crubach. 8. Nach eil iasg anns a' chliabh? 9. Tha clachan anns a' chliabh a nis.
10. Tha eolas agam air dall. 11. Cha 'n eil fion anns an tigh. 12. Bha mi aig ceann an locha an de. 13. Tha an sruth aig ceann an locha. 14. Is i ceist na tire ceist nan ceistean. 15. Cha 'n eil eolas agam air an lagh. 16. A' chaileag bheag le guth mor. 17. Tha an gille aig ceann na sraide.

273. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. A big ship is in the harbour. 2. The badger is in a hole on the moor.
3. The hammer is on the table. 4. The man has five trout in the net.
5. The end of the string is at the flagstone. 6. A basket of seed is on the table. 7. Is there fish in the basket? 8. The stranger was hunting deer on the hill. 9. The foot of the horse is sore. 10. There are tracks of the feet of horses on the moor. 11. The girl with the voice. 12. I had no knowledge of the law. 13. That stranger's house is in this street. 14. There is bread and butter in the house. 15. The land question is the question of questions. 16. A prophet gave a blessing on the host. 17. The man is at the top of the street. 18. Five trout are in the man's net.

LESSON XXV.

THE NOUN. III.

PARTICULAR RULES (CONTINUED)—POLYSYLLABLES.

274. In declining nouns of more than one syllable the method of forming the genitive and plural depends on the form of the last syllable.

Feminine nouns may not always add the terminal *e* in the genitive singular.

275. Nouns ending in **air** may be of three kinds.

276 (*a*) A class indicating an agent or doer except (*b*). These nouns are indeclinable in the singular and add **ean** to form the plural.

sealgair (<i>shalügür</i>)	nm. a hunter.
piobair (<i>peepür</i>)	nm. a piper.
ciobair (<i>keepür</i>)	nm. a shepherd.
morair (<i>mörür</i>)	nm. a nobleman.
murtair (<i>moorstür</i>)	nm. a murderer.
lanntair (<i>llanntür</i>)	nm. a lantern.
tosgair (<i>ttoskür</i>)	nm. a herald.
iasgair (<i>y askür</i>)	nm. a fisherman.

277. (b) A class indicating kinship. These drop the **i** to form the genitive and contract and generally add **ichean** to form the plural.

<i>Nom. and Dat.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	* <i>Plural, N. G. D.</i>
athair (<i>á-ür</i>) a father.	athar	athraichean
mathair (<i>ma-ür</i>) a mother.	mathar	mathraichean
brathair (<i>brahür</i>) a brother.	brathar	braithrean
seanair (<i>shänür</i>) a grandfather.	seanar	seanairean
seanamhair , a grandmother.	seanamhar	seanamhairean
piuthair (<i>pyoo-ür</i>) a sister.	peathar	peathraichean

278 (c) A class indicating neither of these, but where **air** forms part of the word. These and nouns ending in **ar**, **al**, and **ail**, contract in the genitive and add **ach**, and form their plural by contracting and adding **ichean**. The following are all feminine :—

<i>Nom. and Dat.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>Pl. N. G. † D.</i>
acair (<i>achkür</i>) an anchor.	acrach	acraichean
anail (<i>anül</i>) breath.	analach	anailean
barail (<i>baral</i>) opinion.	baralach	barailean
cathair (<i>ka ür</i>) a chair.	cathrach	cathraichean
coir (<i>hor</i>) a right.	corach	coraichean
dail (<i>dahl</i>) delay, a meeting.	dalach	dalaichean
faidhir (<i>fá-yr</i>) a fair.	faidhreach	faidrichean
iuchair (<i>voochür</i>) a key.	iuchrach	faidhrean
litir (<i>lecthür</i>) a letter. m	litreach	iuchraichean
luachair (<i>looüchür</i>) rushes.	luachrach	litrichean
machair (<i>machür</i>) a field, plain.	machrach	machraichean
nathair (<i>nathür</i>) a serpent.	nathrach	nathraichean
peasair (<i>pässür</i>) pease.	peasrach	
ponair (<i>ponür</i>) beans.	ponarach	
togail (<i>tokül</i>) a building.	togalach	togalaichean
		togailean

279. Some Nouns contract and add an **a** or an **e** to form the genitive and form the plural by adding **an**, **achan**, or **ichean** :—

<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Genitive.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
abhainn , f. (<i>ävynn</i>) a river.	aibhne	aibhnichean
buaidh , f. (<i>boo-y</i>) a victory.	buidha	buidhan
buidhean f. (<i>booyün</i>) a company.	buidhne	buidhnean

* The genitive plural when indefinite aspirates the nominative plural or genitive singular, but a definite noun does not aspirate :— **bhrathar**, "of brothers"; **nam brathar**, "of the brothers."

† The genitive plural if indefinite is aspirated according to rule.

Nominative.

banais, f. (*bhan ysh*) a wedding.
coluinn f. (*koll ynn*) the body.
duthaich f. (*dtoo-yeh*) a country.
fiacail f. (*fyach-kyl*) a tooth.

Genitive.

bainnse
cola
duthcha
fiacfa

Plural.

bainnsean
coluinnean
duthchannan
fiacfan

280. Nouns of more than one syllable ending in a vowel are indeclinable in the singular, and add **achan** or **ichean** to form the plural:—

Sing. N.G.D.

balla m. (*ballü*) a wall.
bàta m. (*bpatü*) a boat.
cota m. (*koh ttü*) a coat.
crìdhe m. (*kree-ü*) a heart.
canna m. (*kannü*) a jug.
fairge f. (*farākü*) the sea.
gloine f. (*kloynü*) a glass.
linne f. (*llynnü*) a pool.
leaba f. (*lyāpü*) a bed.
uisge m. (*ooshku*) water.

*Plur. N.G.D.**

ballachan
bàtaichean
cotaichean
crìdheachan
cannachan
fairgeachan
gloinneachan
linneachan
leapaichean
uisgeachan

281. Nouns ending in **l**, **n**, **le**, or **ne** drop the vowel and add **tean** to form the plural:—

Sing. N.G.D.

baile m. a town.
coille f. (*kolyü*) a wood.
feill f. (*fäyll*) a festival.
mìle f. (*my-lü*) a thousand.
smuain f. (*smo-ün*) a thought.
teine f. (*tchā-nü*) fire.
tuil f. (*ttoo yl*) a flood.

*Plur. N.G.D.**

bailtean
coilltean
feilltean
miltean
smuaintean
teintean
tuiltean

282. The following Nouns are altogether irregular:—

<i>Nom.</i>	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>Nom.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>
	<i>Gen.</i>		<i>Gen.</i>	<i>Gen.</i>	<i>mnathan</i>
bean f. a woman	mna	mnaoi	mnathan		
bo f. a cow	boin	boin	ba		ba
braich f. malt	bracha	braich			
cu m. a dog	coin	cu	coin	chon	coin
cuid f. a share	codach	cuid	codaichean		
coir f. a right	corach	coir	coraichean		
caora f. a sheep	caorach	caora	caoraich	chaorach	caoraich
druim m. a back	droma	druim	dromannan		
dia m. a god	de	dia	diathan		
deoch f. a drink	dibhe	deoch	deochannan		
fuil f. (<i>foo yl</i>) blood	fola	fuil			
gobha m. a smith	gobhainn	gobha	goibhnean		
gobhar m. a goat	goibhre	gobhar	goibhnean or gobhair		
gnìomh m. a deed	gnìomha	gnìomh	gnìomharan		
muir f. (<i>moo yr</i>) the sea	mara	muir	marannan		
sail (<i>sal</i>) f. a heel	salach	sail	sailtean		
talamh m. the earth	talmhuinn	talamh	talamhanan		
suil f. (<i>sool</i>) an eye	sula	suil	suillean		
mil f. (<i>myl</i>) honey	meala	mil			
leaba f. (<i>lyāpu</i>) a bed	leapa	leabaidh	leapaichean		

* An indefinite genitive plural will be aspirated according to rule.

283. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Co leis na leabhraichean sin ? 2. Nach leat-sa fein iad ? 3. Tha geugan nan craobh ard. 4. Ceann circe. 5. Cinn chearc. 6. Bha iad aig taobh an uillt. 7. Am bheil fios agaibh far am bheil mac a' ghobhainn ? 8. Bha coin a' chiobair a' sealg nam fiadh air a' mhonadh sin. 9. Am fiadh sin ? 10. Is e. 11. Am bheil eoin air na geugan. 12. Ord an t-saoir. 13. Glas an doruis. 14. Cinn each. 15. Cinn nan each. 16. Casan nam bord. 17. Tha na h-uain air mullach a' chnuic. 18. Bha an lair aig dorus an stabuill. 19. Tha cas a' choin briste. 20. Tha casan nan con briste. 21. Bha cu a' ghille air an dun. 22. Tha e a nis aig an tigh. 23. Tha tigh an t-saoir aig taobh an locha. 24. Tha suil a' chait air an toll. 25. Tha barr nam fiacra briste. 26. Dh' fhalbh an gille anns a' mhaduinn le eallach air a' dhruim. 27. Dh' fhosgail mi leabhar an lagha. 28. Tha na laghan math.

284. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. A shepherd was on the moor this morning. 2. I was at the house of the piper last night. 3. The boat of the fisherman is in the harbour. 4. I will see the brother of the nobleman at the river. 5. The key of the door is here. 6. There is a chair on the right of the door. 7. The little girl has a jug of water. 8. That man had a glass of wine. 9. I had a bed of feathers last night. 10. There was a fire in the town this evening. 11. There was a wedding festival here yesterday. 12. There are woods in that country. 13. He has broken a glass. 14. There were fish in the nets this morning. 15. I found a boy's shoe this evening. 16. The joiner's hammer is broken. 17. The girls sang a song. 18. We found the boy's books on the banks of the river. 19. The books of that boy were wet. 20. Your grandfather's house is at the top of the road. 21. There are men at work at the end of the house.

285. Examination on the Noun :—

1. How is the genitive sing. of masculine nouns generally formed ? 2. What is the distinction of the genitive sing. feminine ? 3. Do both masculine and feminine nouns aspirate in the genitive sing. ? 4. What definite nouns resist aspiration ? 5. Do any definite nouns totally resist aspiration everywhere ? 6. How is the plural of masculine nouns generally formed ? 7. State what difference there is in the genitive plural of masculine and feminine nouns. 8. What is the old dative plural ? 9. How do we translate " at a poem," " of a poem," " to a poem," " of a voice," " to a voice," " of voices " ? 10. What effect has the definite article on the genitive sing. masculine ? 11. Why does an indefinite genitive singular feminine noun not aspirate ?

LESSON XXVI.

THE GOVERNMENT OF NOUNS.

286. Nouns are influenced by other nouns and adjectives ; by verbs ; by prepositions ; causing in the noun a change of case. These cases are called Nominative, Genitive, Accusative, and Dative.

287. The term genitive covers the English possessive case, but as our Gaelic genitive noun does more than the term possessive implies, it is better termed genitive.

THE INDEFINITE POSSESSIVE CASE.

288. In English we can say (a) " a boy's book " or (b) " the book of a boy." The first (a) is the inflected form and (b) the uninflected form. Notice that the " the " disappears when written in the inflected form. Gaelic idiom may be said to be a combination of both forms. In Gaelic the " the " is not translated, and " of a boy " is translated by the genitive case of " boy " ; " of " coming between two nouns in this manner is not translated (par. 212). In Gaelic the qualifying word comes after the noun it qualifies, thus we have, **leabhar balaich** " the book of a boy."

THE DEFINITE POSSESSIVE CASE.

289. Let us take the same phrase with the definite article attached to both nouns, " the book of the boy." The beginner invariably translates this wrongly **an leabhar a' bhalaich**. Write the English in the inflected form thus : " the boy's book." Notice that one " the " has disappeared ; note also that the " the " left belongs to " boy's " and not to " book." Now bearing this in mind we translate thus : **leabhar a' bhalaich**.

290. The rule here is, " A definite noun only can be qualified by another definite noun which is in the genitive ; the definite noun so qualified never takes the article " (pars. 212, 303). A possessive pronoun excludes the article from both nouns, as similarly happens in the English inflected form.

Leabhar a' bhalaich,	<i>the boy's book,</i>	<i>the book of the boy.</i>
Leabhar a bhalaich,	<i>his boy's book,</i>	<i>the book of his boy.</i>
Leabhar a balaich,	<i>her boy's book,</i>	<i>the book of her boy.</i>

291. To sum up. This specially defining use and non-use of the article in Gaelic is similar to the inflected English possessive in idiom, except that the position of the nouns in the one language is the reverse of their position in the other.

292. When two or more nouns are in a possessive phrase one noun only is translated in the genitive. The Gaelic usage is again like the English inflected possessive in its treatment of the article. Note again the complete reversal in the idiom of the two languages.*

1 2 3

Uninflected (a) The beauty of the daughter of the king.

3 2 1

Inflected (b) The king's daughter's beauty.†

1 2 3

(c) **Boidhchead nighean an rìgh** (*not* nìghinn).

In (b) it is the term "king" which has the article and in (c) its Gaelic equivalent **rìgh** also has the article.

293. A noun following a verbal noun is put in the genitive.

Ag itheadh arain, *eating bread* (lit.) *at eating of bread.*

294. Only an indefinite noun of a partitive nature can be followed by or govern another noun in the genitive. These generally denote quantity, plenty or scarcity. Some of these terms are: **moran** many, much; **lan** full; **sac** bag; **began** a little; similarly with an ounce, a lb., a stone, etc., any term indicative of a part³ or a portion of anything (par. 302).

Moran sluaigh, *many (of) people.*

Lan oir, *full of gold.*

Pìos arain, *a piece of bread.*

Badan fraoich, *a sprig of heather*

Sac mine, *a sack of meal.*

Beagan uisge, *a little water.*

295. But when we have an indefinite noun governing, qualifying, or descriptive of another indefinite noun we make practically a compound noun. The qualified noun we place first and it is declined regularly through all the

* A common feature is that the possessive and qualifying nouns (pars. 212, 295) which we translate by the genitive have really the limiting force of an adjective in both languages.

† We can also say in English "the beauty of the king's daughter." In Gaelic we have only one way we can properly translate all these English forms.

cases. The qualifying noun comes second, but is not declined, keeping the genitive form throughout all cases; aspirating like an adjective in the singular in agreement with the gender of the first element (par. 327); aspirating all cases in the plural. A final *e* in the genitive of a first element is deleted. Compound nouns take the gender of their principal component except those compounded with **ban** which are always feminine. A final lingual prevents aspiration of an initial dental (par. 38).

Ban-tighearna (f)	<i>a lady.</i>
(Mullach) tigh-chearc (not tigh)	<i>(top) of a henhouse.</i>
Fear-ciuil	<i>a man of music = a musician.</i>
(Ceann) fir-chiuil (m)	<i>(head) of a musician.</i>

The following show a similar qualifying use of genitive:—

Cir mheala (f)	<i>a honeycomb.</i>
Peann oir (m)	<i>a gold pen = a pen of gold.</i>
Tom ghroiseid (f)	<i>a gooseberry bush.</i>
Tom fraoich (m)	<i>a heather bush.</i>
(Meud) tom fhraoich (not tuim par. 292)	<i>(size) of a heather bush</i>

(Ceann) toman fhraoich *(top) of heather bushes.*

cf. French: *une plume d'or*; *une robe de soie*.

296. A noun and adjective forming a compound are declined as if each stood apart (see government of adjectives (pars 327-8).

Coileach-dubh, *a black-cock*. Coilich-dhuibh, *of a black-cock*.

297. When the adjective precedes the noun with which it is compounded, the adjective retains the nominative form, while the noun is regularly declined through all cases.

Dubh-fhacal, *a dark saying*. Dubh-fhacail, *of a dark saying*.

298. When a compound noun is definite the article is placed before its first word whether noun or adjective, and both the article and the first word are subject to all the modifications already illustrated in Lesson xxii. according to the initial letter of the first word.

An t-oig-fhear,	<i>the young man.</i>
An og bhean,	<i>the young woman.</i>
An seann duine,	<i>the old man.</i>
An t-seann-bhean,	<i>the old woman.</i>
A' choisir chiuil,	<i>the musical choir.</i>
A' chearc-fhraoich,	<i>the moor-hen.</i>

299. The application of the definite article to a compound noun and the change arising in meaning from its use and non-use before the first as well as before the second noun can best be shown by example.

Long-chogaidh (f)	<i>a ship of war.</i>	<i>a warship.</i>
An long-chogaidh	<i>the ship of war.</i>	<i>the warship.</i>
Long (f) a' chogaidh (m)	<i>the ship of the war.</i>	<i>the war's ship.</i>

Observe the effect of the definite article when placed before **cogaidh** changing its meaning to some special and definite "war" and not "war" in general.

Take another example: **meadhon oidhche** "midnight"; **am meadhon oidhche** "the midnight"; now insert **an** before **oidhche** and its meaning is at once defined, **meadhon na h-oidhche** "the middle of the night"; *i.e.* some special night named or known.

300. A study of these compound forms of the noun will show that here again is a similarity with continental languages. It will be observed there is an essential difference of construction from English. Gaelic is like French and other languages in that it goes from the general to the particular, while the English go from the particular to the general. The arrangement of the compound noun in English is exactly inverted in Gaelic.

<i>Eng.</i>	Cod	Liver	Oil.	Annual	General	Meeting
	3	2	1	3	2	1
<i>French</i>	<i>Huile de foie de morue.</i>			<i>Assemblée générale annuelle.</i>		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Gaelic,</i>	Uilleadh gruthan throg.			Coinneamh choitcheann bhliadhnail		
	1	2	3	1	2	3

GOVERNMENT OF THE NOUN BY PREPOSITIONS.

301. Prepositions govern the dative case, in fact, simple prepositions govern no other case (par. 595). Compound prepositions govern the genitive case (par. 614).

A DEFINITE NOUN QUALIFYING AN INDEFINITE NOUN.

302. A definite noun qualifying an indefinite noun cannot be placed in the genitive case, though in English it is governed by "of." We cannot have a definite genitive noun qualifying an indefinite noun (par. 294). In Gaelic we place it in the dative case following the preposition **de**. If an indefinite noun which would otherwise be placed in the genitive (par. 294) is qualified by an adjective, it must be placed in the dative instead (pars. 342, 604b).

Sac de'n mhin sin,	<i>a bag of that meal.</i>
Air pios de'n aran,	<i>on a piece of the bread.</i>
(Air) pios de aran math,	<i>(on) a piece of good bread.</i>
(Air) pios de dh' aran math,	<i>(on) a piece of good bread.</i>
Gann de storas (par. 604b)	<i>scarce of wealth.</i>

303. When there is a demonstrative adjective attached to the first noun the article must be used with it as well as with the second noun, an exception to pars. 212, 602.

Air a' phios so de aran,	<i>on this piece of bread.</i>
Am pios so de aran math,	<i>this piece of good bread.</i>
Am pios so de'n aran sin,	<i>this piece of that bread.</i>
Am pios math so de'n aran sin,	<i>this good piece of that bread.</i>

304. When one noun is predicated of another by the verb **is** and an adjective of praise or dispraise is connected with the predicate, the noun is never put in the genitive. In English the noun is governed by the preposition "of," but in Gaelic it is actually in the nominative case after the verb **is**, which is here used as a relative, standing for "who is."

Is e fear is mor rath,	<i>he is a man of great prosperity.</i>
Is e am fear is mo ciall,	<i>he is the man of greatest sense.</i>

PROPER NAMES AND NOUNS IN APPOSITION.

305. When we have two or more nouns together denoting the same person, such as a proper name, they become a compound noun. The surname or second element is treated as a qualifying adjective (pars. 295, 327).

Bha rìgh Tearlach an sin,	<i>King Charles was there.</i>
Tha Seumas Camshron aig an doras,	<i>James Cameron is at the door.</i>
Tha Mairi Chamshron air dol dhachaidh,	<i>Mary Cameron has gone home.</i>

306. If these are limiting or qualifying another noun, both name and surname are in the genitive.

Ceann Thearlaich Chaimbeil,	<i>Charles Campbell's head.</i>
Tìgh Sheumais Chamshroin,	<i>James Cameron's house.</i>
cf. Ceann Rìgh Tearlach (not Thearlaich),	<i>King Charles' head.</i>

307. In the vocative: **A Mhairi, mo ghaol**, Mary, my love.

308. **Mac** "son" is prefixed for a masculine surname and **Nic** for a feminine. It means "one of the Clan." **Nic** for **ni mhic** (**nighean mhic**) is a distinction not made in English, in which it has no equivalent, it is always "Mac"

even for females. In usage **Mac** and **Nic** are followed by the genitive which is always aspirated (par. 295).

Domhnall Mac Dhughail,	<i>Donald Mac Dougall.</i>
Iain Mac Thomais,	<i>John Thomson.</i>
Anna Nic Uilleim,	<i>Ann Williamson.</i>
Mairi Nic Dhomhnall,	<i>Mary Mac Donald.</i>

309. A simple appellative may be used and be in apposition, descriptive of a person's position, trade, or calling. These generally omit the article, though a feminine is aspirated as though an article were present.

Calum Ciobair,	<i>Malcolm the shepherd.</i>
Cu Chalum Chiobair,	<i>Malcolm the shepherd's dog.</i>
Bha Calum ur n-athair an so,	<i>Malcolm your father was here.</i>
Ceit Bhanarach,	<i>Kate the milkmaid.</i>

310. **Calum an Ciobair** is not wrong, although it is not as *native* as the form given, but if the second part is a compound, the article is necessary—

Alasdair an Ceardumha,	<i>Alastair the coppersmith.</i>
------------------------	----------------------------------

Calum a' Chiobair is quite a different matter. It means "Malcolm of the shepherd—his son or his servant."

311. A term descriptive of the trade, etc., coming after a person's full proper name requires the article.

Domhnall Camshron am maighstir-sgoil,	<i>Donald Cameron, the schoolmaster.</i>
Seumas Grannd an taillear,	<i>James Grant, the tailor.</i>

312. A noun in apposition to, and explanatory of another noun in the genitive case, is not itself in the genitive case, but in the nominative case.

Leabhar Dhonnachaidh Bhain am Bard.	<i>The book of Duncan Ban the poet.</i>
Mac Ioseiph an saor,	<i>The son of Joseph the carpenter.</i>

Notice that we have **am bard** and **an saor**, and not **a' bhaird** or **an t-saor** (the genitive case of them) though they are explanatory of nouns which are in the genitive.

313. Compare the effect of the genitive if applied to this example: **Mac Ioseiph an t-saor**. In this form the sense is completely changed; the meaning being now "the son of the carpenter's Joseph" (i.e. "the grandson of the carpenter," or this Joseph may be an employee of the carpenter).

314. A noun in apposition to a noun in the dative case is put in the nominative.

Thubhairt e ri Sarai a bhean *he said to Sarah his wife.*
(*not a mhnaoi*).

LESSON XXVII.

THE ADJECTIVE.

315. The natural position of the Gaelic adjective is immediately after the noun which it qualifies, as :—

long mhor	(<i>lonk vor</i>)	a big ship.
cu donn	(<i>koo dtownn</i>)	a brown dog.
craobh ard	(<i>kröv ardt</i>)	a high tree.

The exceptions to this rule are the following :—

316. When the adjective is specially emphatic and is ascribed to its noun by the verb **is** or its negative **cha**, etc., it is placed before the noun and immediately follows the verb.

Is fuar an la e, *it is a COLD day.*
Is math a' bhean i, *she is a GOOD woman.*

317. Numeral adjectives both cardinal and ordinal are always placed before their nouns.

Tri bliadhna, *three years.* An treas bhliadhna, *the third year.*

318. Some adjectives of one syllable are placed immediately before the noun which they qualify and generally form a compound word. They suffer no change in termination, but the initial letter may be aspirated if aspirable. See government of compound nouns (pars. 295-8).

Seann duine,	<i>an old man.</i>	Droch dhuine,	<i>a bad man.</i>
Og bhean,	<i>a young wife.</i>	Gorm shuil.	<i>a blue eye.</i>
Deagh obair,	<i>a good work.</i>	Sar obair,	<i>choice work.</i>

319. The agreement of an adjective and noun is regulated by its position in the sentence.

When the adjective immediately follows the noun, it agrees with it in gender, number, and case. Suffering a change sometimes in the aspiration of its initial letter, sometimes a vowel change, according to the gender and case of the noun to which it is a qualification, and thus they

have two forms of declension:—the one with masculine nouns and the other with feminine nouns.

Fear mor, *a big man.* Bean mhor, *a big woman.*

320. When the adjective is one which qualifies and precedes its noun, the form of the adjective does not change in any respect dependent on its noun, but it is influenced by prefixed particles as if it were part of the substantive itself, and it aspirates the initial of its noun if aspirable, as if it formed a compound term (par. 298, 318).

321. When the adjective is in the predicate of the proposition and ascribes a quality to the noun which is the subject, the form of the adjective is not modified by its noun but is used in its simple form whatever be the gender or number of the noun.

Tha a' chlach (f) bheag ban,	<i>the small stone is white.</i>
Tha a' chlach bhan beag,	<i>the white stone is small.</i>
Tha a' chlach beag ban,	<i>the stone is small and white.</i>
Tha a' chlach bheag bhan . . .	<i>the small white stone is . . .</i>
Is ban a' chlach bheag,	<i>white is the small stone.</i>
Tha na clachan beaga ban,	<i>the small stones are white.</i>
Tha na clachan bana beag,	<i>the white stones are small.</i>
Tha na clachan beag ban,	<i>the stones are small and white.</i>
Tha na clachan beaga bana . . .	<i>the small white stones are . . .</i>

Upon examining these sentences it will be seen that in the first the adjective "small" comes before the verb "is" and "white" comes after "is"; in the second they are reversed and in the third both adjectives come after "is." It is very important to note that in translating into Gaelic sentences like the above, that adjectives which in English follow the verb are not aspirated or modified in any way. In the fourth sentence we have both adjectives aspirated, which means that the sentence is incomplete, the qualification being left out.

322. The adjective is not modified when it qualifies the action of the verb, as:—**dean an sgian geur**, "make the knife sharp," Here the adjective does not agree with the noun, for it modifies not the noun but the verb, and the expression is equivalent to "sharpen the knife." But to express "take the sharp knife" we say, **gabh an sgian**

gheur wherein the adjective agrees with the noun, distinguishing that knife from others and consequently it is written in the feminine gender to agree with **sgian**.

323. A noun or adjective whose initial is **d, t, s ; l, n, r**, when preceded by a noun or adjective terminating in **l** or **n** resists aspiration (par. 38).

324. When an adjective is used to describe the quality of two or more nouns it agrees with the one immediately next to it, as :—**fear agus bean mhath**, “a good man and woman.” Here the adjective **mhath** agrees with **bean** the latter noun, but if the position of the nouns is reversed, **bean agus fear math**, “a good woman and man,” the adjective **math** agrees with **fear**.

DECLENSION OF THE ADJECTIVE.

325. The adjective forms its cases in the singular number from the nominative singular according to the rules as given for the declension of nouns having the same vowel or diphthong or termination in the nominative.

326. Thus the general rule is to form the genitive by introducing an **i** after the last broad vowel, the feminine adding the terminal **e**, and the dative singular feminine the same as the genitive, but omitting the terminal **e**. Adjectives of two or more syllables generally make the genitive sing. feminine without the terminal **e**.

327. The nominative singular masculine and feminine are alike, but the feminine is aspirated ; the genitive singular masculine is always aspirated ; the genitive singular feminine is always plain and generally ends in **e** ; the nominative and dative singular feminine are aspirated both with and without the definite article ; the dative singular masculine is not aspirated when without the article but it suffers aspiration when the definite article is *attached ; the vocative singular and plural both masculine and feminine are aspirated.

* This is the only difference which combination with the article causes.

328. In the plural if the adjective is a monosyllable in a broad vowel an **a** is added, and if in a narrow vowel an **e** is added :

craobhan arda,	high trees.	sruthan casa,	swift streams.
orain bhinne,	sweet songs.	daoine glíce,	wise men.
gilleán mora,	big boys.		

329. Adjectives of more than one syllable have the plural the same as the nominative singular :

caileagan maiseach,	handsome girls.
aithrichean dileas,	faithful fathers.

330. Adjectives do not change for case or gender in the plural :

331. Some adjectives in **o** change the **o** into **ui** in the gen. sing.
Some adjectives in **ea, eu,** and **ia** change into **i** „
Some adjectives in **a** change into **oi** „

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Nom. and Acc.	Mor	Mhor	Olc	Olc
Gen.	Mhoir	Moire	Uilc	Uilce
Dat.	Mor	Mhoir	Olc	Uilc
Voc.	Mhoir	Mhor	Uilc	Olc

Common Plurals—**Mora** and **Olc(a)**.

332. Examples of the Genitive Form of the Adjective :

<i>Nom. Masc.</i>	<i>Gen. M.</i>	<i>Gen. F.</i>
ard (<i>árdt</i>) high.	aird	airde
ban (<i>bpán</i>) fair.	bhain	baine
beag (<i>bpāk</i>) little.	bhig	bige
beairteach (<i>bpārshtyüch</i>) rich.	bheirtich	beairtiche
breac (<i>prächk</i>) speckled.	bhríc	brice
caol (<i>köll</i>) narrow.	chaoil	caoile
ceart (<i>kyárst</i>) right.	cheirt	ceirte
cian (<i>keeün</i>) foreign.	chein	ceine
crom (<i>krowm</i>) crooked.	chruim	crulme
crubach (<i>kroopüch</i>) lame.	chrubaich	crubaiche
dall (<i>tawll</i>) blind.	dhoill	doille
dearg (<i>tchárük</i>) red.	dheirg	deirge
direach (<i>tchyrüch</i>) straight.	dhirich	diriche
donn (<i>dtownn</i>) brown.	dhuinn	duinne
gann (<i>káoonn</i>) scarce.	ghoin	goine
geal (<i>kyall</i>) white.	ghil	gille
geur (<i>kyar</i>) sharp.	gheir	geire
glan (<i>gkllan</i>) clean.	ghloinn	gloinne
glas (<i>gklas</i>) grey.	ghlais	glaise
gorm (<i>gorüm</i>) blue.	ghuirm	guirme
lom (<i>llowm</i>) bare.	luim	luime

<i>Nom. Masc.</i>	
maiseach (<i>má-shúch</i>)	pretty.
mall (<i>má ool</i>)	slow.
moch ,	early.
mor	big, great, tall.
olc (<i>awlck</i>)	evil, bad, wicked.
searbh (<i>shárúv</i>)	bitter.
slan (<i>sllawn</i>)	well.
taitneach (<i>táitch-nyúch</i>)	pleasant.
tearc (<i>dtchárúk</i>)	rare.
teinteach (<i>tchán-tchúch</i>)	fiery.
trom (<i>trown</i>)	heavy.

<i>Gen. M.</i>	<i>Gen. F.</i>
mhaisich	maisiche
mhoill	moille
mhuich	muiche
mhoir	moire
uile	uilce
sheirbh	seirbhe
shlain	slaine
thaitnich	taitniche
thairc	teirce
theintich	teintiche
thruim	truime

333. Adjectives ending in a vowel, **ail**, **eil**, **idh**, or **chd**, are indeclinable.

NOUN AND ADJECTIVE WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.

334. The initial form of the adjective depends on the gender and termination of the noun with which it is joined, and on the presence of the article.

<i>Masculine Noun.</i>		<i>Feminine Noun.</i>	
gille mor , a big boy.		craobh mhor , a high tree.	
<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>	<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> gille mor	gillean mora	craobh mhor	craobhan mora
<i>Gen.</i> gille mhoir	ghillean mora	craoibhe moire	chraobh mora
<i>Dat.</i> gille mor	gillean mora	craoibh mhoir	craobhan mora
cat glas , a grey cat.		cearc dhubh , a black hen.	
<i>Nom.</i> cat glas	cait ghlasa	cearc dhubh	cearcán dubha
<i>Gen.</i> cait ghlais	chat glasa	circe duibhe	chearca dubha
<i>Dat.</i> cat glas	cait ghlasa	circ dhuibh	cearcán dubha

335. It will be noticed from the above examples that the adjective is aspirated in the nominative and dative feminine, and in the genitive masculine singular.

336. Observe **cait ghlasa** and note that where the adjective qualifies a noun whose nominative plural is formed like the genitive singular the adjective is aspirated in the nominative and dative plural. It will be found that this class includes principally masculine nouns (pars. 243, 252).

337.

Vocabulary.

borb (<i>bporüb</i>)	adj. fierce.
boidheach (<i>bpoiyúch</i>)	adj. pretty.

338. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Tha clachan troma anns an achadh sin. 2. Tha an t-airgid gann a nis. 3. Tha an gille ban. 4. Bha na cailleagan ban. 5. Tha cu beag an so. 6. Cha'n eil coin bheaga an sin. 7. Le slait gheir. 8. Ann am baile mor. 9. Casan cait dhuibh. 10. Cinn chat dubha. 11. Casan circe duibhe. 12. Tha casan dubha aig a' chaoraich. 13. Adhaircean fhiadh bhorba. 14. Ceann feidh bhuirb. 15. Anns an luing bhig. 16. Siuil gheala luinge moire. 17. Ann am bailtean mora. 18. Tha cearcan bana an sud. 19. Is e so leabhar gille mhoir.

339. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. The rich man was lame. 2. He had a little dog. 3. It was a little black dog. 4. Was it a black terrier? No. 5. Is a terrier a dog? 6. A terrier is a small dog. 7. Was it not a white dog? 8. There was a brown dog at the door. 9. A bad little girl struck a little brown dog yesterday. 10. She was a pretty girl. 11. A bad boy was kicking a big horse. 12. A big horse was being kicked by a bad little boy. 13. It is a bare house. 14. Was it a bare house with a narrow door? 15. He was a rich man. 16. A black hen's head. 17. A brown horse's foot. 18. A fierce cow in a big field. 19. A sheep with black feet and a black head is there now.

LESSON XXVIII.

340. NOUN AND ADJECTIVE WITH THE ARTICLE.

Examples.

an t-each donn *m.* the brown horse.

Sing.

Plur.

<i>Nom.</i>	an t-each donn	na h-eich dhonna
<i>Gen.</i>	an eich dhuinn	nan each donna
<i>Dat.</i>	an each dhonn.	na h-eich dhonna, or na h-eachaibh donna

a' chreag bheag *f.* the little rock.

<i>Nom.</i>	a' chreag bheag	na creagan beaga
<i>Gen.</i>	na creige bige	nan creaga beaga
<i>Dat.</i>	a' chreig bhig	na creagan beaga

341. From the above examples notice that an adjective qualifying a definite masculine noun in the dative case singular is aspirated in addition to the aspiration of the genitive shown in the previous example.

342. Adjectives of quantity and of a partitive nature govern an indefinite noun in the genitive, but if the noun

is definite the preposition **de** and the dative case must be used (pars. 294, 302, 604b).

Beagan arain,	<i>a little bread.</i>
Beagan de'n aran,	<i>a little of the bread.</i>
Moran sluaigh,	<i>many people.</i>
Iomadh de na bliadhnachan,	<i>many of the years.</i>
Beagan greine,	<i>little sunshine.</i>
Beagan de'n ghrein,	<i>little of the sunlight.</i>

343. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Is fuar an la e. 2. An iad na h-eich mhora? 3. Is iad. 4. Tha clachan troma anns an achadh so. 5. Tha an t-airgiod gann a nis. 6. Tha an t-each dubh trom. 7. Tha an cat breac leisg. 8. Tha na coin gheala mor. 9. Am bheil cearc air a' chreig bhig? 10. Bha an duine og air bristeadh na h-uinneige moire. 11. Tha a' bho bheag bhan a' tighinn dhachaidh. 12. Tha a' chearc ghorm dall. 13. An robh an duine og air bristeadh an doruis chaoil? 14. Is dubh an dorus beag. 15. Tha neul glas air bharr na linne guirme. 16. Is boidheach an dath a tha air an t-sobhraich.

344. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Have the bad boys been home yet? No. 2. The pretty little girl was in that big field this afternoon. 3. The right knife is sharp. 4. That man had the crooked stick. 5. Where was he with the crooked stick? 6. He was (**bu**) a big man. 7. The house with the little narrow door is yonder. 8. That will not be the house with the big door. 9. The blind horse was being struck by the bad boys. 10. The young boy was at the big black house last night. 11. The bare trees are on the hill. 12. The trees are bare now. 13. Where is the little brown dog? 14. The big black dog is with the man with the crooked stick.

345. Correct and translate :—

am bean mor; an tigh bheag; laimh geal; mac an duine big; ceann an lhoch; beagan an h-aran; lamhan an duine droch; lamhan an ghille salacha; mac an tailleur bhiga; an duine mhath; bean glic; na clachan beage; seann dhan.

346. Examination Questions :—

1. What is the general place of the Gaelic adjective qualifying a noun?
2. Are adjectives indeclinable in Gaelic as in English?
3. How is the plural of an adjective generally formed?
4. What is the difference of the nominative and genitive masculine?
5. In what lies the difference between the nominative and genitive feminine?
6. What happens when adjectives precede their nouns?
7. Do all adjectives which precede their nouns aspirate the noun?
8. Why not? (give reasons).
9. What does the aspiration of an adjective indicate?
10. When does the noun aspirate the adjective?

LESSON XXIX.

THE VERBS **tha** AND **is** WITH AN ADJECTIVE.

347. There is always a difference in meaning between **tha** and **is** which we shall try to further illustrate by examples. One reason is that **tha** means "is now" and **is** means "is always" or "is" without any reference to time and circumstances. **Tha mi bacach** means "I am now lame," *i.e.*, at present. **Is bacach mi**—if we use **bacach** with the force of a noun—means "I am lame—I am a cripple"; if **bacach** is used as a simple adjective then this form **is bacach mi** simply emphasises or draws special attention to the state or condition of "lameness," like saying "how lame I am!—it is lame I am—it is no slight lameness I have."

348. Compare the expressions (1) **tha mi bronach** and (2) **is bronach mi**. The first expression may be translated "I am sad," no particular emphasis being attached to any part of the sentence. The second expression is best translated "sad am I," in this case particular stress is laid on the fact of "sadness." The first phrase states with logical precision that the attribute "sad" belongs to the speaker, the second is a rhetorical device for calling attention to the existence or reality of the sadness. No. (1) is therefore the form to be used in everyday speech when the giving of information merely is the purpose of the speaker. No. (2) is the language of poetry, maxims, proverbs, and impassioned speech and is analogous to such inversions as "Great is Diana of the Ephesians," and the like in English, **Is mor Diana nan Ephesianach**.

DEFINITE NOUN (SUBJECT) and INDEFINITE NOUN
AND ADJECTIVE (PREDICATE).

349. When a sentence contains a definite noun as the subject and an indefinite noun with an adjective as the predicate, we have three forms which we can use in Gaelic, according to the impression we wish to convey.

"James is a strong man" can be translated (1) **Tha Seumas 'na dhuine laidir**; the meaning of which is that "James has become—has grown to be—a strong man."

(2) **Is duine laidir Seumas** ; here we take James as we find him, and do not convey that he was at one time not so strong. He belongs to the species of strong men and is not an ordinary man. The emphasis in this sentence is on the **laidir**, and to make this emphasis more marked, the words are usually placed in a different order—(3) **Is laidir an duine Seumas** ; notice the use of the definite article **an**, a literal translation of the phrase being “Strong is the man James.” In this construction we are much more impressed by his strength. Sentences of this latter form therefore are translated by detaching the adjective from the English predicate and making the noun follow it in the definite form.

350. In the affirmative question “Is James a strong man?” we can only convey the idea of (1) quality, or (2) species ; we cannot say we are (3) impressed with his strength when we are merely inquiring about it. Neither can a negative sentence convey this third meaning. When, however, we have negative question forms, these do express feeling or impression about the subject and are equivalent to an exclamation. “Isn’t James the strong man?” is equal to saying “What a strong man James is !” **Nach laidir an duine Seumas** ? The idea therefore of “feeling” and “impression” is confined to affirmative statements or negative questions.

It should be noted while we are talking of negative questions that sentences of “feeling” or “impression” like “How cold the water is !” “How nice the house is !” ; “How heavy the book is !” ; “What a strong man James is !” ; can all be translated in this manner by means of the negative question.

351. Translate into Gaelic using the verb **tha** and **is** alternately :—

1. The dogs are clever. 2. Clever are the dogs. 3. The hero was brave. 4. Brave was the hero. 5. The bridge was steep. 6. Steep was the bridge. 7. The horse is swift. 8. Swift is the horse. 9. The primrose is yellow. 10. Yellow is the primrose. 11. The clouds are black. 12. Black are the clouds. 13. The wind is strong. 14. Strong is the wind. 15. The lamb is young. 16. Young is the lamb. 17. The dog is faithful. 18. Faithful is the dog. 19. I am happy. 20. Happy am I. 21. The brown dog is fierce. 22. Fierce is the brown dog.

LESSON XXX.

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES.

352. There are two kinds of Comparison, the one a comparison of equality, the other the comparison of inequality; because all things are in some respect alike or unlike.

THE COMPARATIVE OF EQUALITY.

353. What we may term a comparison of equality is when two or more articles are compared as having an equal degree of the quality denoted by the adjective. In Gaelic the ordinary or positive form of the adjective is used, preceded by the conjunction **cho** and generally followed by **ri**, **ris**, **le**, etc. (pars. 633-4-5).

Tha ise cho glic riutsa,	<i>she is as wise as you.</i>
Tha Iain cho ard ri Seumas,	<i>John is as tall as James.</i>
Tha mo thigh cho ard ri ur tigh-se,	<i>my house is as high as your house.</i>
Tha Seumas cho laidir ri Iain,	<i>James is as strong as John.</i>
Tha e so cho geal ris an t-sneachda,	<i>this is as white as snow.</i>

THE COMPARATIVE OF SUPERIORITY.

354. The comparative form of the adjective must be used when in comparing two objects, one object is said to possess more than the other of the quality mentioned.

355. The adjective has only one form for both comparative and superlative, and this form is the same as the genitive singular feminine in **e** final; as

ban , fair.	baine , fairer.	dubb , black.	duibhe , blacker.
trom , heavy.	truime , heavier.	geal , white.	gile , whiter.

356. Further examples of the formation of the genitive singular feminine, which, as already stated, is the same as the comparative form of the adjective, will be found in par. 332.

357. The comparative adjective is not inflected for case or number, but suffers aspiration like any other adjective.

358. The comparison when made by the verb **is** is followed by **na**, "than."

Is gile mo lamhsa na do lamhsa,	<i>my hand is whiter than your hand.</i>
Is gile a' ghrian na a' ghealach,	<i>the sun is brighter than the moon.</i>
Is baine Seumas na Iain,	<i>James is fairer than John.</i>
Bu bhaine Seumas na Iain,	<i>James was fairer than John.</i>
Bu ghile e na sneachda,	<i>It was whiter than snow.</i>
An truime a' chlach so na i sin ?	<i>is this stone heavier than that ?</i>

359. When any other part of the verb **bi** (except **is**) is used in a comparative, we require to use a relative clause, the comparative adjective being preceded by **na's** (compounded of the relative phrase **an ní a is**, "the thing which is") except in a past tense where **na bu** is used. Both forms being followed by **na** "than."

Tha Iain na's baine na Seumas,	<i>John is fairer than James.</i>
Bithidh Seumas na's airde na Iain,	<i>James will be taller than John.</i>
Bha Iain na bu bhaine na Seumas,	<i>John was fairer than James.</i>
Bha e na bu mhilse na a' mhil,	<i>It was sweeter than the honey.</i>
Tha e na's laidire a nis na bha e riamh,	<i>he is stronger than ever he was.</i>
Tha e na's fhearr na Iain,	<i>he is better than John.</i>

360. When translating an English adjective in the superlative degree we use the assertive form of the verb **is**, but we also put the sentence into a relative form. We use **as** the relative form of the verb **is** to precede the superlative when present time is spoken of, and **a bu** when past time is spoken of. The superlative relative requires the presence of the definite article in front of the nouns; in this it specially differs from the comparative; a proper noun is definite without the article. Thus:—"the tallest man" is translated **am fear as airde**, "the man who is tallest." The superlative can be shown in the greatest degree of quality when comparing three or more objects by being followed with a prepositional phrase.

Is e Seumas as baine,	<i>James is the fairest.</i>
Is e Seumas as baine de'n teaghlach.	<i>James is the fairest of the family.</i>
B'e Seumas a bu bhaine de'n teaghlach	<i>James was the fairest of the family.</i>
Is e sud an tigh as motha anns a' bhaile,	<i>that is the biggest house in the town.</i>
Is e am fear as fhearr (note aspiration),	<i>he is the best man.</i>
Is i a' bheinn as airde anns an t-saoghal,	<i>it is the highest mountain in the world.</i>

361. Note for guidance :—

na's is the sign of the comparative.

as is the sign of the superlative.

Gaelic.	English.	French.
mor	great	<i>gros</i>
na's mo	greater	<i>plus gros</i>
as mo	greatest	<i>le plus gros</i>

THE COMPARATIVE OF INFERIORITY.

362. The comparison of inferiority is very similarly made with **na's** and the comparative **lugh** "less" = "least."

'S e Iain am fear as lugh
de'n triuir.

John is the least of the three.

Tha a' ghealach na's lugh
soillse na a' ghrian,

*the moon is less bright than the
sun.*

363. Intensive particles, such as **ro**, **glé**, **fior**, **air**, **leth**, **anabarrach**, are frequently placed before adjectives in their simple form, to increase their signification; as **ro mhath**, very good (too good); **anabarrach mor**, exceedingly great (par. 620-1).

A VERBAL ADJECTIVE.

364. Some monosyllabic adjectives admit of a verbal form compounded with the verb **is** and the prepositional pronoun formed from **de**. This is really not a second form of the comparative, as Stewart and other grammarians make out, being only an idiomatic combination which has nothing to do with the comparative adjective, as can be illustrated thus :—**is feairde thu sin**, "thou art the better of that," can be resolved into **is fearr tu deth sin**, from which we can clearly see that **feairde** is not a second form of the comparative (par. 604e).

B' fheaird mi sin,

I was the better of that.

Nach bu mhisde e sin ?

was he not the worse of that ?

Is truimide am poca,

the bag is the heavier of it.

Is beag is misd thu sin,

it's little you are the worse of that.

Cha mhisde leam e 'bhi mar
sin.

*I do not think he will be the worse
of being so (so=like that).*

365. A derivative noun may be formed from the comparative by changing the final **e** into **id**, as :—

baine, fairer.

teotha, hotter.

daoire, dearer.

bainid, fairness.

teothaid, heat.

daoirid, dearness.

366. IRREGULAR ADJECTIVES.

Some of the commoner adjectives are irregular in the formation of their comparative form :—

<i>Positive.</i>	<i>Comparative.</i>
beag (<i>bṽāk</i>) little.	lugha (<i>lōgh-ū</i>) less.
cumhang (<i>kooygh</i>), narrow.	cuinge (<i>kooyngū</i>).
duilich (<i>dtoolūch</i>) difficult.	duilghe or dorra (<i>dtoolyū</i>)
fagus (<i>faghūs</i>) near.	faisge (<i>fāshkū</i>).
furasda (<i>foorastū</i>) easy.	fhasa (<i>assū</i>).
goirid (<i>gōrytch</i>), gearr (<i>kyār</i>) short.	giorra (<i>gyrrū</i>).
ionmhuinn (<i>eeun-vynn</i>) beloved.	annsa (<i>aunsā</i>) dearer.
leathan (<i>lyā-ūn</i>) broad.	leatha (<i>lyā-ū</i>).
math (<i>ma</i>) good.	fearr (<i>fyār</i>).
mor (<i>mōr</i>) great.	mo or motha (<i>mō-hū</i>)
olc (<i>awlck</i>) bad.	miosa (<i>myss-ū</i>) worse.
teth (<i>tchā</i>) hot.	teotha (<i>tcho-ū</i>).
toigh (<i>toyh</i>) loved, fond.	docha (<i>dochū</i>) fondest.
laidir (<i>llātchūr</i>) strong.	treise, treasa (<i>trāshū</i>), or
	laidire (<i>llātchyrū</i>).

367.

Vocabulary.

Mor nf. Sarah.	cuideachd (<i>kootchack</i>) nf. a company.
teaghlach (<i>tchowlūch</i>) nm. a family.	sine (<i>sheenū</i>) adj. older.
Glascho nm. Glasgow.	faide (<i>fātchū</i>) adj. longer.
Alba (<i>Alūpū</i>) nf. Scotland.	Duneideann (<i>dunātchūnn</i>) Edinburgh.

368. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Is e Iain a b' airde de 'n teaghlach. 2. Is e so a' chraobh as motha anns a' choille. 3. Tha Seumas na's airde na Iain. 4. Bha Mor na bu lugha na Seumas. 5. Is i Mor as sine de 'n teaghlach. 6. A' chlach as truime anns an achadh. 7. An duine as beairtiche ann an Albainn. 8. Is lugha caora na bo. 9. Is miosa Mor na Seumas. 10. Bu treise Seumas na Iain. 11. Am miosa an cu na cat? 12. Is faigse a' chraobh so na a' chraobh sin. 13. Is gile do lamhsa na mo lamhsa. 14. Am bheil thu a' dol na's faide? 15. B' fheairrde mi sin. 16. An Iain as sine anns a' chuideachd? 17. Is e Duneideann as boidhche na Glascho. 18. Cha mhisde e sin. 19. Tha Seumas sean ach is i Mor as sine. 20. Tha an t-each sgith ach tha an cu na's sgithe. 21. Thainig an tuathanach agus bhris e casan nan con.

369. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. John is taller than James. 2. He is the eldest of the family. 3. He is not the eldest of the family. 4. Sarah is older than him. 5. Sarah will be the eldest of the family. 6. Is John not older than James? 7. John is younger than James. 8. The sheep is smaller than the cow. 9. Is Edinburgh prettier than Glasgow? 10. Edin-

burgh is smaller than Glasgow. 11. Glasgow is larger than Edinburgh but Edinburgh is the prettier. 12. The stones in this field are heavier than those in that field. 13. They are not the worse of that. 14. The highest trees are on that hill. 15. The biggest river in Scotland. 16. The highest mountain in Scotland. 17. The moon is not as bright as the sun. 18. What is better than gold? 19. The worst boy in the school. 20. The shortest day in the year. 21. That is the biggest house in the town.

370. Examination Questions :—

1. What does the comparative express, and how many comparatives are there?
2. How do you express a comparative of equality?
3. What is to be observed when the preposition **de** is before a substantive in a comparative sentence?
4. What is the positive?
5. How do we translate the English termination "est" in a comparative?
6. Mention three adjectives which form their comparative irregularly.

LESSON XXXI.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

371. Numerals, Cardinal and Ordinal, precede their nouns; as **tri eich**, three horses; **an ceathramh fear**, "the fourth man"; except when the cardinal number is employed to designate a particular person; as *Rìgh Tearlach a Dhà*, "King Charles the Second."

372. The cardinals have two forms, one form to be used with nouns—these become simple adjectives; the other form is used without a noun and really become nouns themselves. The following is a selected list of the former, illustrative of the various changes which take place when governing a masculine noun.

After **aon**, **da**, **fichead**, **ciad**, **mìle**, and any multiple of these, the noun is in the singular form. These numerals only seem to take the nominative singular—**fichead fear**, **ciad fear**. They are in reality substantive nouns governing the genitive case, so that **fear** in **fichead fear** is not nominative singular but genitive plural.

1 man.	aon fhear (<i>ōn er</i>).
2 men.	da fhear (<i>dta er</i>).
3 "	tri fir (<i>tree fyr</i>).
4 "	ceithir fir (<i>kā-yr fyr</i>).
5 "	coig fir (<i>ko-yk fyr</i>).
6 "	se or sia fir (<i>shā or sheeū fyr</i>).
7 "	seachd fir (<i>shackk fyr</i>).
8 "	ochd fir (<i>ochk fyr</i>).
9 "	naoi fir (<i>nooū fyr</i>).
10 "	deich fir (<i>tchāych fyr</i>).
11 "	aon fhear deug (<i>ōn er tchāk</i>).
12 "	da fhear dheug (<i>dā er yāk</i>) (2+10=12).
13 "	tri fir dheug .
20 "	fichead fear (<i>seechütt fer</i>).
21 "	aon fhear ar fhichead (<i>ōn er āreechyütt</i>).
22 "	da fhear ar fhichead . (2+20=22).
23 "	tri fir ar fhichead (<i>tree fyr āreechyütt</i>).
30 "	deich fir ar fhichead, or deich fir fhichead .
31 "	aon fhear deug ar fhichead .
32 "	da fhear dheug ar fhichead (2+10+20=32).
33 "	tri fir dheug ar fhichead .
40 "	da fhichead fear (<i>dta eechyütt fer</i>).
41 "	da fhichead fear 's a h-aon (<i>ū hōn</i>).
42 "	da fhichead fear 's a dha (<i>ū ghā</i>).
50 "	da fhichead fear 's a deich, or leth chiad fear (<i>lyā-chyütt fer</i>).
60 "	tri fichead fear (<i>tree seechyütt fer</i>).
61 "	tri fichead fear 's a h-aon .
62 "	tri fichead fear 's a dha .
80 "	ceithir fichead fear (4 <i>twenties</i> =4 <i>score</i>).
90 "	ceithir fichead fear 's a deich .
100 "	ciad fear (<i>keeüt fer</i>).
101 "	ciad fear 's a h-aon .
150 "	ciad gu leth fear (<i>keeüt goo lyā fer</i>).
200 "	da chiad fear (<i>da chyütt fer</i>).
1,000 "	mile fear (<i>mylü fer</i>).
1,915 "	mile fear, naoi ciad 's a coig deug, or mile, naoi ciad is coig fir dheug .
14,000 "	ceithir mile deug fear .
100,000 "	ciad mile fear .
1,000,000 "	muillion fear (<i>moolyün fer</i>).

373. **Gu leth** when used with the higher numerals signifies "one half more"; **ciad gu leth**, "one hundred and a half," "150"; **mile gu leth**, "one thousand five hundred," "1500," or "a mile and a half"; but with the smaller numbers it means "one-half" only: **tri gu leth**, "three and a half," "3½"; **lethchlach**, "half-a-stone"; **leth**, one of a pair—**leth chas** "one foot."

NOTES ON THE NUMERALS.

374. **Aon** aspirates all consonants except **l, n, r** ; **d, t, s**.

Aon bhean,	<i>one woman.</i>	Aon duine,	<i>one man.</i>
Aon chraobh,	<i>one tree.</i>	Aon fhear,	<i>one man</i>
Aon eile,	<i>one other.</i>	Aon sam bith,	<i>anyone.</i>
M' aon chearc,	<i>my only hen.</i>	Gach aon,	<i>everyone.</i>
'San aon luing,	<i>in the same ship.</i>	Aon uair,	<i>once, 1 o'c.</i>

375. **Da.** (1) Aspirates all consonants except **l, n, r**.

(2) Takes a dual number of the noun, a form which closely corresponds to the modern dative singular aspirated.

Da righ,	<i>two kings.</i>	Da dhuine,	<i>two men.</i>
Da thigh,	<i>two houses.</i>	Da bhroig,	<i>two shoes.</i>
Da uair,	<i>twice, 2 o'c.</i>	Da chloich,	<i>two stones.</i>

(3) An adjective qualifying such a noun, whether it is masculine or feminine, is also aspirated. It is not inflected, remaining in the nominative case aspirated (or we might say the nominative singular feminine).

Da chloich bheag,	<i>two little stones.</i>	Da fhear dheug,	<i>twelve men.</i>
Da bhradan mhor,	<i>two big salmon.</i>	Da each dhonn,	<i>two brown horses.</i>

(4) In poetry the adjective sometimes takes the plural.

Da chirc mhora, *two large hens.* Da nighinn bheaga, *two little daughters.*

(5) If the numeral **da** with its noun and adjective is preceded by a preposition, both noun and adjective take the dative case singular.

Le da chloich bhig,	<i>with two little stones.</i>
Aig an da chaileig bhig,	<i>at the two little girls.</i>
Aig an da bhalach bheag,	<i>at the two little boys.</i>
Do dha nighinn oig,	<i>to two young daughters.</i>
Fo dha bhord fhada,	<i>under two long tables.</i>

(6) But when the noun after **da** is itself governed in the genitive by another noun, the government of the numeral **da** gives way to the stronger influence.

Buinn mo dha bhroige,	<i>the soles of my two shoes.</i>
Siuil an da luinge,	<i>the sails of the two ships.</i>
Barran da chluais duine,	<i>the tips of a man's two ears.</i>
Cul a da laimhe,	<i>the back of both her hands.</i>
Clann an da mhna,	<i>the children of both wives.</i>
Mal an da thighe,	<i>the rent of both houses.</i>
Ceann an da mheoir,	<i>the ends of the two fingers.</i>

376. **Deug.** (1) It is an adjective and always agrees with the gender of its noun.

(2) Of the numbers in which **deug** appears, namely 11 to 19, both inclusive, two of these, 11 and 12, take a singular noun. In 11, if the noun is masculine, **deug** remains unaspirated; but if the noun is feminine **deug** suffers aspiration unless the noun ends in a dental or lingual (**d, t, s; l, n, r**). In 12, the effect of **da** "two," which appears in this number, has been already shown.

Aon each deug	(m)	<i>eleven men.</i>
Aon chat deug	(m)	<i>eleven cats.</i>
Da chu dheug	(m)	<i>twelve dogs.</i>
Da bhradan deug	(m)	<i>twelve salmon.</i>
Aon chluas deug	(f)	<i>eleven ears.</i>
Aon bhrog dheug	(f)	<i>eleven shoes.</i>
Da chirc dheug	(f)	<i>twelve hens.</i>
Da uair dheug	(f)	<i>twelve hours, 12 o'clock.</i>

(3) The numbers 13 to 19 inclusive, take the noun in the plural. **Deug** is only aspirated in the case of nouns which introduce an **i** in their plural declension, generally masculine nouns (par. 336).

Tri fir dheug	(m)	<i>thirteen men.</i>
Tri cait dheug	(m)	<i>thirteen cats.</i>
Seachd doruis dheug	(m)	<i>seventeen doors.</i>
Coig bailtean deug	(m)	<i>fifteen towns.</i>
Naoi brogan deug	(f)	<i>nineteen shoes.</i>
Ceithir ba deug	(f)	<i>fourteen cows.</i>

(4) Notice that all the numbers 11 to 19 inclusive, place the noun between the digit and **deug**. **Deug** corresponds to the English termination "teen."

377. **Ar fhichead.** The cardinal numbers with a noun, from 21 to 30, require that noun placed immediately after the digit and before the termination **ar fhichead**. **Air**, or **ar**, is an aspirating preposition.

Ceithir uain ar fhichead,	<i>twenty-four lambs.</i>
Tri brogan ar fhichead,	<i>twenty-three shoes.</i>
Tri brogan fichead*,	<i>twenty-three shoes.</i>
Ceithir uain fhichead,	<i>twenty-four-lambs.</i>
Da chirc fhichead (ar fhichead)	<i>twenty-two hens.</i>
Deich cearcan fichead,	<i>thirty hens.</i>

* Note that plural nouns of more than one syllable ending in **n** used thus do not aspirate **fichead**.

378. When dealing with numbers above forty, the easiest way for translating is to take—First, the number of score, then the noun, and finally, the remaining odds.

	fichead "20=a score."
	tri fichead , "60=three score."
65;	tri fichead agus a coig "three score and five."
65 horses;	tri fichead each agus a coig.
87 sheep;	ceithir fichead caora agus a seachd.
123 men;	se fichead duine agus a tri "six score men and three."

379. **Ciad** (**ceud**) is always aspirated after **aon**, **da**, **tri**, **ceithir** :—

tri chiad fear, "three hundred men."

THE CARDINAL NUMBER AS A NOUN.

380. When the cardinal number is used as a noun, the particle **a** is placed in front of the simple cardinal number; this particle aspirates **aon**, **da**, and **ochd**. Twelve numbers are illustrated herewith. After "forty" both forms are alike.

One,	a h-aon (<i>ü hön</i>).	seven,	a seachd
Two,	a dha (<i>ü ghâ</i>).	eight,	a h-ochd
Three,	a tri (<i>ü tree</i>).	nine,	a naoi
Four,	a ceithir (<i>ü kâhyr</i>).	ten,	a deich
Five,	a coig (<i>ü ho yk</i>).	eleven,	a h-aon deug
Six,	a se, sia (<i>ü shâ, sheeü</i>)	twelve,	a dha dheug

Mharbh e a dha (*varv ä ü ghâ*), *he killed two.*
 Rìgh Seumas a h-aon, *King James the First.*
 Rìgh Tearlach a dha dheug, *King Charles the Twelfth.*
 Thainig e le a h-ochd, *he came with eight.*
 Chaidh iad le a h-aon deug air fhichead, *they went with thirty-one.*

381. The cardinal numbers can also take the article :—**an aon** "the one"; **an da** "the two"; etc.

PERSONAL NUMERALS.

382. We have ten numerical nouns formed from the cardinal numbers used to refer to persons only. These, when followed by a noun, govern that noun in the genitive plural :—**ceathrar mhac** "four sons"; **coignear bhan** "five women."

aonar ,	one (person).	seanar	six (persons).
dithis ,	two (persons).	seachdnar ,	seven "
triuir ,	three "	ochdnar ,	eight "
ceathrar ,	four "	naonar ,	nine "
coignear ,	five "	deichnear ,	ten "

383. The numerical noun **aonar** is used in several ways idiomatically as follows, and generally means "alone" :—

Duine 'na aonar,	<i>a man all alone.</i>
Chaidh mi am aonar,	<i>I went alone (am=in my—one person)</i>
Rinn e so 'na aonar,	<i>he did this alone.</i>
Tha e leis fein,	<i>he is alone (with himself).</i>

384. THE ORDINAL NUMBERS.

an ceud fear, a' cheud fear,	the first man.
an dara fear,	the second man.
an treas fear,	the third man.
an ceathramh fear,	the fourth man.
an coigeamh fear,	the fifth man.
an seathamh fear,	the sixth man.
an seachdamh fear,	the seventh man.
an t-ochdamh fear,	the eighth man.
an naoidheamh fear,	the ninth man.
an deicheamh fear,	the tenth man.
an t-aona fear deug,	the eleventh man.
an dara fear deug,	the twelfth man.
an treas fear deug,	the thirteenth man.
am ficheadamh fear,	the twentieth man.
an t-aona fear fichead,	the twenty-first man.
an dara fear fichead,	the twenty-second man.
an treas fear fichead,	the twenty-third man.
an deicheamh fear fichead,	the thirtieth man.
an da fhicheadamh fear,	the fortieth man.
an da fhicheadamh fear 's a h-aon,	the forty-first man.
an da fhicheadamh fear 's a deich,	the fiftieth man.
an tri ficheadamh fear 's a h-aon deug,	the seventy-first man.
an ciadamh fear,	the hundredth man.
an se ficheadamh fear,	the hundred and twentieth man.
an se ficheadamh fear 's a tri,	the hundred and twenty-third man.
an mileamh fear,	the thousandth man.

an ceud is the only ordinal which aspirates the noun.

EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

385. Vocabulary.

- sgillin** (*skylynn*) nf. a penny.
la, laithean (*llá yün*), nm., a day, days.
seachduin (*shachkün*) nm. a week.
mios (*myss*) nf. a month.
brog, -oige (*brawk*) nf. a shoe, of a shoe.
mionaid, -ean (*my natch*) nm. a minute, minutes.
uair, -ean (*ooür*) an hour, hours.
meadhon-la (*mā-on llá*) nm. mid-day.
chaidh (*chá y*) irr. v. past, went.

fagaidh (*fāk-y*) v. fut. will leave.

theid (*hātch*) irr. v.f. will go.

thig (*heek*) irr. v.f. come or will arrive.

roimh (*roi*) prep. before.

pairc, pairce (*pā yrk*) nf. a park, of a park.

saighdear (*sā ytchūr*) nm. a soldier.

cia meud ? cia mheud ? (*ky māt*) how much, how many ?*

386. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Bha ceathrar fhear agus coignear bhan air a' bhàta sin. 2. Bha da chiad uan agus ciad gu leth caora anns an fhang. 3. Tha an ceathramh gille agus trì coin air a' mhonadh. 4. Tha a h-aon de na coin crubach. 5. Bha seachd uain anns an fhang an de. 6. Bha da chaora an sin am feasgar so. 7. Tha trì fichead caora agus da fhichead uan anns a' phairc. 8. Tha da shlait bheag agus aon lion anns a' bhàta. 9. Cia meud iasg a bha anns an lion ? 10. Bha ochd ciad deug is a coig. 11. Tha da bhroig a' ghille anns an tigh. 12. Tha seachd laithean anns gach seachdain. 13. De 'n uair a tha e ? 14. Tha e deich mionaidean roimh dha uair. 15. Cuine a dh' fhalbhas an carbad-iarunn ? 16. Falbhaidh e aig coig mionaidean deug ar fhichead an deidh naoi uairean roimh mheadhon la. 17. Tha deich leabhraichean agamsa ach is le m' athair an deicheamh fear. 18. Tha an treas fear sgith. 19. Cia meud duine tha anns a' bhaile ? 20. Is e sud an t-aona fear fichead. 21. Cia meud uan tha anns an fhang ? 22. Deich is trì fichead. 23. An robh na coin air a' mhonadh an de ? 24. Cia meud bha ann ? 25. Bha trì. 26. Bha na trì coin leis a' chiobair.

387. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. There are nineteen sheep in that field, and there are eleven sheep in this field. 2. How many sheep are in these two fields ? 3. Thirty sheep are in these two fields. 4. There are ten cows and two bulls in that park. 5. Three men and two boys are in that boat there. 6. They have four rods and two nets with them. 7. How many fish have they ? 8. The shepherd and his three dogs are on the hill. 9. He has eighty-five sheep on that hill and ninety on that hill. 10. His fourth dog is lame to-day. 11. When will the train leave here ? 12. The first train will leave at nine-thirty a.m. 13.

* **Cia meud ?** "how much ?" or literally "what quality, size or amount." If to things for sale, it refers to price or value. If to man it refers to debt owed by him.

Cia meud a tha air an leabhar ?

How much is on the book ?

Cia meud a tha air im ?

What is the price for the book ?

Cia meud a tha ort ?

What is the price for butter ?

How much is on you ?

How much do you owe ?

Cia meud a tha aig mo thighearn' ort-sa ?

How much owest thou unto my Lord ? Luke xvi. 5.

Is there not one at eleven o'clock? 14. The second train will go at twelve mid-day. 15. It is only nine o'clock at present. 16. My watch is fifteen minutes slow. 17. There are twenty shillings in the pound, and twelve pence in the shilling. 18. How many pence are in the pound? 19. He had fifteen shillings and I had ten shillings. 20. How much had we? 21. This little boy has two feet and two hands. 22. He has two shoes on his feet. 23. The third man has six boys.

388. Correct the following and translate :—

aon ba, aon buth, aon dhuine, da casan, da daoine, da fichead, da miltean, da broige, tri cas, tri tasdan, aon deug fir, naoi deug earba, mile caoirich, tri mile fir, a cheud fear, an ceud clach, a ceud duine, seachd caoraidh deug.

389. Examination Questions :—

1. Why should we write **aon duine** and not **aon dhuine**?
2. Why should we not translate "men" in the plural in **da dhuine**?
3. What is wrong with **da shgillin**; **da broige**; **da choise**.
4. Why should we not say **coig tasdain dheug**?
5. Is **deug** always aspirated?
6. Does **da** always aspirate and cause aspiration?
7. What is the difference in **a dha** and **an da**? Why are both not aspirated?
8. What does **a' cheud** do that no other ordinal number does?

LESSON XXXII.

THE PERSONAL PRONOUN.

390. Personal pronouns agree with the noun for which they stand in gender number and case, and are as follows:

		<i>Singular.</i>		
<i>Simple.</i>		<i>Emphatic.</i>		
1st,	mí (<i>mee</i>)	míse (<i>meeshü</i>)		I, me.
2nd,	thu (<i>oo</i>)	thusa (<i>oosü</i>)		thou, thee.
3rd,	e (<i>ā</i>)	esan (<i>essün</i>)		he, him, it.
	i (<i>ee</i>)	ise (<i>eeshü</i>)		she, her, it.
		<i>Plural.</i>		
<i>Simple.</i>		<i>Emphatic.</i>		
1st,	sinn (<i>sheen</i>)	sinne (<i>sheennyü</i>)		we, us.
2nd,	sibh (<i>sheev</i>)	sibhse (<i>sheev-sü</i>)		you
3rd,	iad (<i>eeütt</i>)	iadsan (<i>eeütt sun</i>)		they, them.

391. Each personal pronoun may be declined and each may take the emphatic form through all the cases.

1st PERSON SINGULAR **mi** I.

<i>Nom.</i>	mi I.	mise I.	mi-fein myself.
<i>Gen.</i>	mo my.	mo . . . sa mine.	mo . . . fein my own.
<i>Dat.</i>	dhomh to me.	dhomhsa to myself.	
<i>Acc.</i>	mi me.	mise myself.	mi . . . fein my own.

1st PERSON PLURAL **sinn** we.

<i>Nom.</i>	sinn we.	sinne we.	sinn-fein ourselves.
<i>Gen.</i>	ar our, of us	ar . . . ne ours.	ar . . . fein our own.
<i>Dat.</i>	dhuinn to us	dhuinne to us.	
<i>Acc.</i>	sinn us.	sinne us.	sinn-fein ourselves.

392. **Mi** and **mise** are aspirated after **bu** and **cha** in the tenses of the verb **is**.

393. **Tu** when nominative to a verb is always aspirated except with the verbs **is** and **bu** and sometimes with the relative future and subjunctive tenses of the active voice. In the accusative it is always aspirated.

bu tu it was thou. **buaillidh tu e**, you will strike him.
bhuail iad thu, they struck you. **bhuail thu e**, you struck him.

394. The 3rd person singular pronoun used to be more inflected than we now have it. *Nom.* **se**, "he"; *Acc.* **e** "him." It is still heard in this nominative form in a few instances to mark a distinction, as :—**bhuail se e**, "he struck him"; **chuala si e** "she heard him."

395. The pronoun **sibh** "you" is frequently used in the singular number instead of **thu**, when addressing a person senior in age or in polite conversation, as :—**Ciamar tha sibh?** "How are you?"

396. As there is no difference in Gaelic between the nominative and objective cases, the position in the clause must fix this, as :—**bhuail e mi**, "he struck me"; **bhuail mi e**, "I struck him."

397. The pronouns have all an emphatic form which is most frequently used with the verb **is**.

398. The word **fein** or **fein**, corresponding to the English words "self" and "own," adds still more emphasis, as :—**mi fein**, "I myself"; **sibh fein**, "you yourselves"; **iad fein**, "themselves"; **mo shluagh fein**, "my own people"; **mo chu fein**, "my own dog."

399. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Bha e fliuch an de.
2. Tha duine aig an doras, tha e sgith.
3. Tha na gillean a' dol do'n bhaile.
4. Tha iad a' dol ann an diugh.
5. Bithidh mi anns a' bhaile am maireach.
6. Thilg* e clach agus bhuaile mi.
7. Bhuaile thu e.
8. Nach do bhuaile thu e.
9. Ciamar tha sibh ?
10. Tha mi gle sgith.
11. Is e so an cu.
12. Cha'n e.
13. Is e sin cat.
14. Cha leam-sa e.
15. Bha sinn an sin sinn-fhein an raoir.
16. Chunnaic mi esan agus a' chaileag anns an doras.
17. Nach robh iad-san anns an tigh ?
18. Am bheil iad aig an doras ?
19. Tha iad aig an doras.
20. Nach eil iad-san aig an doras ?
21. Cha'n eil.
22. Am bi iad anns a' bhaile ?
23. Cha bhi.

400. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. I will be in town to-morrow.
2. It is wet now.
3. The boy was at the door.
4. You struck him last night.
5. He was there yesterday.
6. Did you strike him ?
7. I threw* a stone and it struck him.
8. The stone struck the girl.
9. She was at the door.
10. They went to the town to-night.
11. They are going to-morrow.
12. We will be there the day after to-morrow.
13. Were you at home last night ?
14. I was.
15. You will be at home to-morrow.
16. I said she will not be there.
17. I was there myself last night.
18. I was not there to-day.
19. You said that you would be going this evening.
20. That book is mine and this is the boy's.
21. It was there yesterday.

LESSON XXXIII.

PREPOSITIONAL PRONOUNS.

401. All the personal pronouns unite with the prepositions, each compound forming a single word. In each case the preposition and the pronoun amalgamate in such forms as to be considerably and in some cases completely disguised.

402. These prepositional pronouns are of constant occurrence in the language—scarce a sentence in which they are not met with. They are therefore of great importance and the learner is well advised to get most of the more commonly used forms off by heart.

403. Each of these prepositional pronouns takes an emphatic increase or suffix **-se**, **-sa**, **-san**, **-ne**, and the whole word thus formed is called the emphatic form.

* thilg (*heeleck*) v. threw.

THE PREPOSITIONAL PRONOUNS.

404.

Prepositions.	Singular.					Plural.	
	mi me	tu thee	e him	i her	sinn us	sibh you	iad them
Aig, at air, on ann, in a, as, out of bho, o, from de, of, off do, to fo, under gu, gus, to, till le, leis, with mu, about ri, ris, to roimh, before thar, over troimh, through eadar, between	agam, at me orm annam asam bhnam, uam dion dhion domh dhomh fodham chugam lean umam rium romham tharam tromham	agad ort annad asad bhua diot dhiot duit dhuit fodhad chugad leat umad riut romhad tharad tromhad	aige, at him air ann as bhuaith deith dheith da dha fodha foidhe chuige leis uime ris roimhe thairis air troimhe	aice, at her oirre innite aiste aisde bhuaipe dith dhith di dhith foidhpe chuice leatha uimpe rithe roimpe thairis oirre trompe	againn oirinn annainn asainn bhuainn dinn dhinn duinn dhuinn fodhainn chugainn leinn umainn ruinn romhainn tharainn tromhainn eadarainn	agaibh oirbh annaibh asaibh bhuaibh dibh dhibh duibh dhuibh fodhaibh chugaibh leibh umaibh riutha rompa tharta trompa eatorra	acagan orra ann'a asda bhuaipa diubh dhiubh daibh dhaibh fopa chuca leo umpa riutha rompa tharta trompa eatorra
Emphatic forms -sa, -san, -se, -ne.	agamsa etc.	agadsa etc.	aigesan etc.	aicese etc.	againne etc.	agaibhse etc.	acagan etc.

405. The dative of the pronoun, i.e. :—the prepositional pronoun must be used for “me,” “him,” “her,” “us,” “you,” “them,” when the meaning is “to me,” “to him,” etc. This can easily be seen by the sense.

Thoir dhomh freagairt,	<i>give me an answer.</i>
Thoir dhomh leabhar,	<i>lend me a book.</i>
Thug sibh uam-sa an leabhar sin.	<i>you have taken from me that book.</i>
Thoir dhaibh an t-airgid,	<i>give them the money.</i>
Bheir mi dhuit e,	<i>I will give it you.</i>
Thoir dhomh deoch,	<i>give me a drink.</i>
Dh'innis e sgeul dhomh-sa,	<i>he told me a story.</i>
Cuir chugam litir,	<i>send me a letter.</i>

406. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Tha leabhraichean againn.
2. Tha eagal orm.
3. Thug mi aran da.
4. Cuir uait an leabhar agus innis dhuinn sgeul no seinn oran.
5. Cuir foidhpe do chota.
6. Bha eagal mor orra.
7. Thubhairt mi rithe.
8. Falbh leis do 'n bhaile.
9. Cuir dhìot do chota fliuch.
10. Tha an t-uisge ann.
11. Theid mi leibh anns a' mhaduinn.
12. Thainig mi leo an raoir.
13. Thoir dhomh do lamh.
14. Slan leibh.
15. Is le Seumas an leabhar sin.
16. Tha leabhar aig Seumas.
17. Thug iad uaibh na leabhraichean so.
18. Chuir i oirre a cota agus thainig i le m' mhac do 'n mhonadh.

407. Translate English into Gaelic :—

1. Do not be afraid.
2. I was not afraid and I will not be afraid.
3. The man was angry to-day.
4. You were angry last night.
5. I do not know him and he does not know me.
6. This house is mine.
7. He has a house.
8. I have a house, but it is not my own house.
9. If we had bread we would not be hungry.
10. Are you not hungry?
11. I am hungry.
12. Is it raining?
13. Was there any rain yesterday?
14. It will be wet here to-morrow, it was wet there to-day.
15. There is rain.
16. They have the books.
17. Tell them the story.
18. Do not put under me your hat.
19. I came before you last night.
20. You came between John and James.
21. They will be out of town to-day.
22. I will be with them in town the day after to-morrow.
23. We will go towards the town now.

LESSON XXXIV.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

408. The possessive pronouns or possessive adjectives, which are merely the genitives of the personal pronouns, are as follows :—

Singular.		Plural.		
(before a consonant)	(before a vowel)	(before a consonant)	(before a vowel)	
1. mo (<i>mō</i>)	m'	ar (<i>ār</i>)	ar n-	our.
2. do (<i>dō</i>)	d' ; t' *	ur ; bhur	bhur n-	your.
3. a (<i>ūh</i>)	'	an (<i>ün</i>)	an	their.
a (<i>ūh</i>)	a h-	am (before b f m p)		their.

* For note see following page.

409. These possessive pronouns are adjectival and precede their nouns. They cause aspiration of all aspirable consonants in the 1st and 2nd singular, and in the 3rd singular masculine.

Mo chathair,	<i>my chair.</i>	M' athair,	<i>my father.</i>
Do chu,	<i>thy dog.</i>	*D' fhalt (<i>dalt</i>),	<i>your hair.</i>
A mhac (<i>vachk</i>),	<i>his son.</i>	'Athair (<i>a'ür</i>),	<i>his father.</i>
A mac,	<i>her son.</i>	A h-athair,	<i>her father.</i>
Ar n-athair,	<i>our father.</i>	Bhur n-athair,	<i>your father.</i>
An gille,	<i>their boy.</i>	Am bàta,	<i>their boat.</i>

410. Observe that while the masculine **a** "his" aspirates a following consonant it does not aspirate a vowel, and again that **a** "her" aspirates a following vowel but does not aspirate a consonant.

411. The possessive pronouns do not attach the emphatic terminations as do the personal pronouns. If emphasis is to be shown the emphatic increase is attached to the noun which is qualified by the possessive, or if one or more adjectives are present it is attached to the last adjective.

Is e so mo leabhar-sa,	<i>this is my book.</i>
Ur cat beag-sa,	<i>your little cat.</i>

412. **Fein** combines with the possessive as with the personal pronoun, but here it means "own"; like the emphatic termination it is placed after the noun or last adjective if any are attached.

Mo mhac math fein,	<i>my own good son.</i>
--------------------	-------------------------

413. In English there are distinct forms of the possessive pronouns which can stand without nouns, "mine," "thine," "his," "hers," etc. In Gaelic we have no forms corresponding to these. When they are in the predicate after the verb "to be" we use in Gaelic the prepositional pronouns formed from **le** "with" (belonging to)† (par. 188).

This book is hers,	<i>tha an leabhar so leatha-se.</i>
That hat is mine,	<i>tha an ad sin leam-sa.</i>
These shoes are yours,	<i>tha na brogan sin leibh-se.</i>

* Before vowel and **f**+vowel nouns **do** is often hardened to an original **t** and instead of **d' fhalt** we hear **t' fhalt**; **t' athair** "thy father"; except when preceded by a preposition ending in a vowel **air t' each** "on your horse" but **do d' each** "to your horse."

† cf. French idiom:—

Ce livre est à moi. "This book is mine" (=belongs to me).

414. The possessive pronouns may be replaced by the prepositional pronouns formed from **aig**; "my dog" **an cu agam**.

415. These possessives are used with the verbal nouns to denote a passive meaning:

Chaidh e g' a mharbhadh, *he went to his death.*
lit. *he went to his killing.*

416. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Tha ar n-eich anns an stabull. 2. Am bheil d' each an sin?
3. Cha'n eil. 4. Tha e anns a' phairc. 5. Tha m' athair aig an dorus,
ach tha mo mhathair anns an tigh. 6. Am bheil do chu an so?
7. Tha. 8. Tha m'fhalt fliuch a nis. 9. Is e so mo chu-sa. 10.
Tha an gille aig a' bhaile. 11. Bha a mac an sin an de. 12. Cha
bhi e an so am maireach. 13. Tha na brogan sin leam-sa. 14. Is
le Seumas an leabhar. 15. Theid thu leam. 16. Bha mo chathair
briste. 17. Thilg e clach, bhuail i mo chas agus ghearr si i.

417. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. My mother is at the door. 2. Is your dog there? 3. No, my dog
is in the house. 4. My father is here now. 5. His son is not here.
6. Her son will be in the town to-morrow. 7. He is not there now.
8. Their boat struck a rock. 9. They had to come out of her. 10.
They went to their death. 11. That hat is yours. 12. This house is
theirs. 13. That is her coat. 14. I will go with you. 15. The book
belongs to James. 16. I threw a stone and it struck his foot.

418. Correct these and translate:—

Mo falt, mo h-athair, do cu, do cas, an fear, am chu, ur thligh, mo
brog-se, do suil-sa, ar bhàta-san, am n-athair, am mhac, bhur
h-athair.

419. Examination Questions:—

1. What is the place of the possessive adjective?
2. Do possessives agree with the nouns they specify?
3. How do we express "my chair," "your chair," "his chair,"
"her chair"?
4. **Cathair** is feminine; now apply the same possessives to the mas-
culine noun **falt** "hair."
5. Where do we put the emphatic increase when used with the
possessive?
6. How do we translate the English possessive pronouns "mine,"
"thine," "yours," "hers"?
7. When do we translate "his" by **a** and when should we use **leis**?

PREPOSITIONAL POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

420. There are two prepositional possessive pronouns in common use formed from the prepositions **ann** "in"

and **aig** "at." These are used in idiomatic phrases with the verbal nouns. These prepositional possessive pronouns have the same influence over the nouns which may follow them as the simple possessives exercise.

421.

Ag.

1st	'gam,	at my.	'gar,	at our.
2nd	'gad,	at thy.	'gur,	at your.
3rd	'ga,	at his, <i>or</i> at her.	'gan,	at their.

422.

Ann.

	<i>Singular.</i>		<i>Plural.</i>
1st	'nam, in my.		'nar, in our.
2nd	'nad, in thy.		'nur, in your.
3rd	'na, in his, <i>or</i> in her.		'nan, in their.

423. These prepositional possessives are used when in English the personal pronoun follows the participle or verbal noun (pars. 571-2).

Tha an dealg so 'gam chiarradh.	<i>this pin is hurting me</i>
Tha sibh 'ga chaireadh,	<i>you are mending it (at its mending).</i>

424. The other prepositions are also used with the possessive, but they do not enter into such close union with them as **aig** and **ann** do; the elision of a final vowel being the only change effected.

LESSON XXXV.

IDIOMS OF THE VERB **bi**; **bi** WITH **ann**.

425. We have previously shown that the verbs **tha**, **bha**, **bheil**, etc., signify existence connected with locality, state, condition, and that they take the preposition or particle **ann** to strengthen them in that statement.

426. When the predicate is an appellative denoting something which belongs to the subject, the general term is limited by placing before it the prepositional possessive pronoun corresponding to the nominative.

Tha e 'na gharadh,	<i>he is in his garden.</i>
Tha e 'na thigh,	<i>he is in his house.</i>
Tha e 'na bhàta.	<i>he is in his boat.</i>

427. In these expressions the general term is limited to a particular instance of that which is denoted by it, viz. :—that which belongs to the subject. Thus the subject is in the locality denoted by the appellatives “garden,” “house,” etc., and particularly by the restricted definition “his garden.”

428. The same idiom is used to declare the condition of the body or mind—physical, mental, or moral.

Tha e 'na shlaite,	<i>he is well (in his health)</i>
Tha e 'na chabhaig,	<i>he is in haste (in his haste).</i>
Tha e 'na chiall,	<i>he is in his senses.</i>

The state which is defined by the term “health,” “his health,” or “the health which is peculiar to him.”

429. We have already seen the relationship which connects men and things with a large portion of their conditions and belongings. As things or states were seen to affect us and to become related to us because they were “at us” or “with us” or “on us” so now *vice versa* things or states affect us and become related to us all the more because we are “in” them. They are grafted as living branches into the tree of our personality; or rather our personality is merged in them.

430. The same idiom is used to declare a man's outward attitudes.

Tha e 'na chadal,	<i>he is asleep (in his sleeping).</i>
Tha iad 'nan seasamh,	<i>they are standing (in their standing, in their posture of standing).</i>
Tha e 'na laighe,	<i>he is lying (he is abed).</i>

431. Precisely the same idiom is used to express actual existence or what is predicated of or declared of the nominative case. Actual existence being a concrete term, the predicate by which it is expressed is a concrete term and not an abstract term. This is the strangest and most peculiar idiom yet noticed.

A man's office trade or relationship :—

Bha Iain 'na sheoladair,	<i>John was a sailor (in his sailor).</i>
Tha e 'na shaor,	<i>he is a joiner (in his joiner).</i>
Tha e 'na mhinistear,	<i>he is a minister (in his minister).</i>
Tha e 'na dhuine,	<i>he is a man (in the state denoted by the term man, “manhood”)</i>

Tha e 'na athair do'n teaghlach, *he is a father to the family.*
(lit. : *he is in his father ; in his relation of father*).

Tha e 'na sheirbhiseach do Iain, *he is a servant to John.*
(lit. : *he is in his servant, in his relation of servant to John*).

432. Further examples of its use to declare a man's reputation, character, personal attributes, nationality, etc.

Tha e 'na ghaisgeach, *he is a hero (in his hero)*
Tha i 'na sgoilear, *she is a scholar (in her scholar).*
Tha e 'na fhirean, *he is a just man (in his true one).*
Tha e 'na dhuine uasal, *he is a gentleman (in his man honourable).*

Tha e 'na bhreugair, *he is a liar.*
Tha e 'na chealgair, *he is a cheat.*
Tha e 'na ghealtair, *he is a coward.*
Tha an leanabh 'na ghille, *the child is a boy (in his boy).*
Tha e 'na choigreach, *he is a stranger.*
Tha e 'na Shasunnach, *he is an Englishman, or*
Cha'n eil ann ach Sasunnach, *there is not in him but an Englishman.*

Bha i 'na mnaoi ghlic, *She was (in her) a wise woman.*
Bha an duine 'na amadan, *the man was a fool (in his fool).*
Tha e 'na aon-fhear (par. 383) *he is alone (in his one-man).*
Tha e 'na thruaghan, *he is miserable (in his miserable one).*

433. Prof. Masson gives a helpful definition of this last idiom, that by converting the adjective descriptive of a man's abstract condition into a personal noun, it takes that personal noun, and so to speak plants the man in the middle of it. Thus while as in English, we say, **tha an duine balbh** "the man is dumb," yet by means of this idiom, we concrete and animate the man's abstract quality of dumbness, and, planting him in the heart of our creation, we say, **tha an duine 'na bhalbhan** "the man is in his dumb one," or as, owning the influence of this Gaelic idiom, we would say vulgarly, "he is a dummie."

434. Another similar Gaelic idiom in very common use may be illustrated here. We have shown that the man can exist "in his carpenter"; that the subject can exist in a quality; but in Gaelic a quality can also be said to exist in a subject. The "carpenter" can exist in the man, as well as the man "in his carpenter."

Is e saor tha annad, (lit.) *it is a carpenter that is in you.*
Cha'n eil innte ach a' ghlaic, *she is but a silly woman.*

435. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Tha e 'na oglach. 2. Tha e 'na chabhaig. 3. Tha mi 'nam gharadh.
 4. Tha mi 'nam thigh. 5. Tha iad 'nam bàta. 6. Tha sinn 'nar cadal.
 7. Bha mi 'nam laighe. 8. Bha e 'na chiall. 9. Tha e 'na mhinistear.
 10. Tha e 'ga bhualadh. 11. Tha i 'ga bualadh. 12. An robh 'each gad bhreabadh?
 13. Cha robh, bha e 'ga bheabadh-sa. 14. Tha thu 'nad dhuine math.
 15. Tha thu 'nad bhreugair. 16. Bha e 'na dhroch dhuine.

436. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. My horse is in the field but his is in his garden. 2. Her brothers are in your father's house. 3. They were on their ship. 4. James was a sailor. 5. They say John is a joiner. 6. She was striking him and he was striking her. 7. I was a stranger. 8. He is in his boat. 9. I am standing. 10. He was asleep in his house. 11. You are in haste. 12. I am well. 13. She was a cheat. 14. The boy was a fool. 15. He was a coward. 16. That man was a gentleman.

LESSON XXXIV.

437. THE RELATIVE PRONOUN.

a	(<i>ùh</i>)	who, whose, whom, that.
an	(<i>ùn</i>)	which, that (dative after a preposition) becomes
am	(<i>üm</i>)	which, that (dative) before b, f, m, or p.
na	(<i>nükh</i>)	what, that which.
nach	(<i>nach</i>)	who not, which not, that not, but.

438. As the relative **a** has no inflection for case, the construction or context must determine whether the relative is nominative to the verb which follows it, or is governed by it in the accusative, as :—**an gille a bhual mi** may mean either “the boy who struck me” or “the boy whom I struck.”

439. The relative **a** is the same for each case.

Nom. and Acc. **a** “who”; *Gen.* **a** “whose”; *Dative* **a** “whom.”

440. After all the cases the verb is aspirated and has a special form used in the future ending in **as** or **eas** (par. 510).

Am fear a thuit,	<i>the man who fell.</i>
An gille a tha dubh,	<i>the boy who is black.</i>
Am mac a bha fuar,	<i>the son who was cold.</i>
Am fear a bhitheas fuar,	<i>the man who will be cold.</i>
Am fear a bhitheadh fuar,	<i>the man who would be cold.</i>
An gille a dh'ith an t-aran	<i>the boy who ate the bread.</i>
Am fear a thogas a' chis,	<i>the man who collects the tax.</i>
A' chis a thogas am fear,	<i>the tax which the man collects.</i>
An duine a dh'fhosgail an dorus,	<i>the man who opened the door.</i>

441. The genitive of the relative **a** is distinguished by the presence of a possessive pronoun thus:—"the boy whose book I took," **an gille a thog mi a leabhar** ("the boy of whom I took his book")

An duine a fhuair thu a chuid,	<i>the man of whom you received his property.</i>
Sud a' bhean a bha sinn a stigh aice,	<i>yon is the woman in whose house we were.</i>
Am fear a thainig a mhac gu baile,	<i>the man whose son came home.</i>

442. The dative is usually strengthened by a preposition.

Na daoine a dh'fhuirich thu aca,	<i>the men with whom you stayed.</i>
An te a tha thu suirdhe oirre,	<i>the girl whom thou art courting.</i>

443. In Gaelic the relative is frequently used adverbially in an explanatory way as in the phrase:—**Cia mar a tha sibh?** "How are you" (*lit.* "How is it that you are") (par. 450-1).

444. The only change for case in the relative **a** is in the dative after a preposition, where it takes the form of **an**, changing the **n** into **m** before **b**, **f**, **m**, or **p**. Prepositions which take an **s** before the definite article take it also in this position. The relative drops the **a** following vowels; in some places is represented by an apostrophe and sometimes all trace of it is omitted.

An obair ris an robh mi,	<i>the work at which I was.</i>
An tigh anns am bi sinn,	<i>the house in which we shall be.</i>
Am bord air am bitheadh e,	<i>the table on which it would be.</i>
An t-eilean far am bheil iad,	<i>the island where they are.</i>
A' chiste air an do chuir mi e,	<i>the chest on which I put it.</i>
An cupan as an ol mi,	<i>the cup of which I shall drink.</i>
An gille bho'n d'thug mi a leabhar.	<i>the boy from whom I took his book.</i>

445. The relatives **an**, **am**, **a'**, **'n**, when coming immediately after a preposition and before a verb must not be mistaken for the article or the verbal interrogative particle.

446. The relative negative **nach** gives little trouble and may be illustrated in a few sentences. It is followed by the dependent form of the verb.

Am fear nach cuala mi,	<i>the man who did not hear me.</i>
Am bord air nach bitheadh e,	<i>the table on which it would not be.</i>
An tigh nach do thog mi,	<i>the house which I did not build.</i>
An obair ris nach robh mi,	<i>the work at which I was not.</i>
Thubhairt e nach bitheamaid,	<i>he said that we would not be.</i>

447. **Na** "what" follows the construction of a relative, but has never any antecedent expressed. It is used like "that" and "what" in English (with an idea of totality).

Chuala mi na thubhairt thu,	<i>I heard (all of) what you said.</i>
Fhaidh Iain na cheannaich e,	<i>John paid what he bought.</i>
Fhuair mi na dh'iarr mi,	<i>I got what I asked.</i>
An e sin na tha agad ?	<i>Is that all you have ?</i>
Tha mi coma air son na chaill mi,	<i>I care not for what I lost.</i>

448. THE VERB **is** IN RELATIVE SENTENCES.

The Relative Forms of the Verb **is** are :—

Present **is, as** : Past **a bu** : Neg. **nach**.

is and **as** aspirate verbs with initial **f** followed by a vowel.

bu aspirates all aspirable consonants.

449. These forms are usually found with the comparative and superlative of adjectives and sometimes with the positive.

Is tu am fear as fhearr,	<i>you are the best man.</i>
(lit. : Bu mhise am fear a bu fhearr,	<i>you are the man who is best).</i>
Tir nach beag,	<i>I was the best man.</i>
Am fear is aithne dhomh,	<i>a land which is not small.</i>
Am fear is mo a tha ann diubh,	<i>the man whom I know.</i>
Am fear is rìgh an Albainn,	<i>the biggest man there is of them.</i>
Cìod is crìoch araid do'n duine ?	<i>the man who is king in Scotland.</i>
A' bheinn as airde anns an t-saoghal.	<i>what is the chief end of man ?</i>
B'i Mairi a b'airde de'n teaghlach	<i>the highest mountain in the world.</i>

Mary was the tallest of the family.

450. An English sentence containing a nominative case, verb and adjective, is often translated into Gaelic in a relative sentence. Take **tha mi tinn** "I am sick"; this can be reproduced in Gaelic in a peculiar idiom and one very often heard in Highland English as the effect of adopting the Gaelic idiom.* The Gael can lay special

* French :

Qui est-ce qui vient de vous parler ? Who has just spoken to you ?
(lit. who is it that comes to you speak) ?

Qu'est-ce que vous dites ? What do (lit. What is it that) you say ?

stress on the adjective by bringing it forward to the beginning of the sentence, thus:—**is tinn a tha mi** "I am (very) sick," "it is sick that I am," and so in the negative question **nach tinn a tha e?** "is it not sick that he is?"

451. Similarly "it is I who am here," "it was I who was there." In these English sentences when the second verb is in the past tense the introductory verb is also in the same tense. In Gaelic the introductory verb generally is in the present tense, though the second verb may be past or future tense.

Is mise a tha ann,	<i>I am here = It is I who am here.</i>
Is mise a bha ann,	<i>I was there = It (is) was I who was there.</i>
Nach tu a bha ann?	<i>Is it not you that was there?</i>
Is mise a bhitheas ann,	<i>It is I who will be there.</i>

452. **Gu'n**, which is a relative conjunction is a contraction for **gu** "to, unto, with" and **an** the dative case of the relative **a**. It is used to signify a wish or idea and implies that a sentence which is not expressed precedes the clause it introduces.

(*Is e mo mhiann-sa*) **gu'm bu slan a chi mi thu.**

(*It is my wish*) *that I may see you well.*

B' fhearr leam gu'n tigeadh tu.

I wish that thou would'st come (lit. : *I wish with that thou would'st come = I wish to the effect that you would'st come*).

453. Similarly, the other prepositions combine with the relative:—

do'n	"to whom, to which."
mu'n	"about whom, before that."
fo'n	"under whom, under which."
o'n	"from whom, from that."

454. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Is e am fear a dh'ith an t-aran.
2. Is e an gille a bha fuar.
3. An duine a thug thu bhuaithe a chuid.
4. Cia mar a tha thu.
5. Is e an gille a bhuaill mi.
6. An obair ris an robh thu.
7. Thubhairt e gu'n robh mi tinn.
8. An cupan as an ol thu.
9. Am bord air nach bi e.
10. Chuala mi na thubhairt iad.
11. An dh'thubhairt iad gu'n robh iad fuar?
12. C'aite am bheil an gille a fhuair an sgian?
13. Nach eil e anns an stabull?
14. Co bha anns an doras?
15. Is e so am fear nach gabh a' bhean.
16. Am fear nach cuala mi.
17. An tigh anns an robh e.
18. Co bha leis na gillean anns an achadh?
19. Bha na fir leis na gillean.

455. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. That man paid what he got. 2. Who is he? 3. What is it?
 4. He is the man who has the horse. 5. I slept in the house in which
 he was. 6. Who has that horse in the field? 7. Who lost the knife
 in the house? 8. Who is it that lost this knife in my house? 9. We
 saw the boy who was in the boat. 10. I was there. 11. It is my wish
 that you may see me well. 12. He will be the best man. 13. The
 highest mountain in Scotland. 14. What is the chief end of man?
 15. That is not the house where we were. 16. That is the man who
 opened the door.

LESSON XXXVII.

456. INTERROGATIVE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

Co ? (*ko*) who is ? ; **co e** ? who is he ? ; **co i** ? who is she.

The Gaelic verb **is** is completely eclipsed, but is still understood after the interrogative relative.

co dhuibh ? (*ko yoo*) which of them ? (properly of two).

co aca ? (*ko ach-kü*) which of them ? among them ? (of many).

co leis ? (*ko läsh*) whose ? (lit. : whom with ?).

co sam bith (*ko süm be*) whoever, whatever (who in the world).

ciod ? (*küt*) what is ? **ciod e so** ? what is this ?

cia ? (*ky*) what ? which ? how ?

cia meud ? (*ky mätt*) how many ? how much ?

de ? (*tchā*) what ? (from **ciod**) **de tha so** ? what is this ?

457. The English interrogative possessive “whose” is translated into Gaelic by the idiom “whom with” * (par. 188, 413 and note).

Co leis an leabhar so ?

whose is this book ?

Is leam-sa e,

It is mine (with me).

458. **Co** and **ciod** when occurring in the middle of a phrase are affirmative and not interrogative. **Ciod** is often followed by the relative **a** when affirmative, though this latter can be sometimes understood.

Cha n'eil fios agam co (a is) iad, *I do not know who they are.*

Chunnaic mi co (a) bha anns an dorus, *I saw who was in (at) the door.*

Tha fios agam ciod a ni feum da, *I know what will do good to him.*

459. Vocabulary.

mu, conj. (*moo*), about.

labhairt, vn. (*lläv-ürtch*) speaking.

seoladair (*shyollüttür*) a sailor.

maileid, nf. (*mällatch*), a bag.

caileag, nf. (*kälük*), a girl.

rinn, v. irr. p. (*roynn*), did.

sgoul, nm. (*skäll*), a story.

theich, v. p. (*häych*), ran away.

* French : *A qui est ce livre ?* Whose (lit. : to whom) is this book ?

460. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Co leis so ? 2. Nach eil fios agaibh co e ? 3. Bha am bàta air an robh sinn, air a bristeadh. 4. Sin an t-achadh anns nach eil craobh. 5. Co aig am bheil an t-airgiod ? 6. Co leis an t-airgiod ? 7. Bha am fear o'n d'fhuair sinn am bàta 'na sheoladair. 8. Ciod e mu'm bheil sibh a' labhairt ? 9. Cheannaich mi an t-each nach do cheannaich sibh-se. 10. Thug mi an leabhar so do dhuine aig nach robh airgiod. 11. Co rinn e so ? 12. De tha so ? 13. Is e so cu. 14. Ciod e sin ? 15. Is i a' mhaileid sin a bha aig a' chaileig. 16. Co air bith thug i do'n chaileig ? 17. Co bha leis na gillean anns an achadh ? 18. Bha na fir leis na gillean. 19. Co bhrist an uinneag ? 20. Co aca rinn sin ? 21. Is e Calum no Iain a bhrist i.

461. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Who is he ? 2. I do not know who he is. 3. Do you know who is at the door ? 4. Who is it ? 5. The boy who broke the window is here now. 6. The girl whom you saw ran away. 7. Who did it ? 8. Which of them did it ? 9. What is it ? 10. James gave it to me, but a man broke it. 11. He went into the house in which his sons were. 12. He bought the boat from a sailor who had no money. 13. The man from whom I got the story was a soldier, who was not young. 14. The man who struck me ran away. 15. Who was he ? 16. I did not know him. 17. The boat of which you were speaking is on the shore. 18. Whose was it ? 19. It would be the fisherman's boat. 20. Which of them said that ? 21. Whoever said it ran away. 22. What is this ? 23. It is a bag they gave me. 24. Which of them gave you that ? 25. Whose is this ? 26. Is it not yours ? 27. No.

LESSON XXXVIII.

THE DEMONSTRATIVES.

462. The demonstratives are mostly used as adjectives to distinguish one or more objects from others spoken of, and point out their distance from and proximity to the speaker. They do not aspirate in any position, nor do they cause aspiration to other words.

- so** (*shoh*) this, these, here.
sin (*shin*) that, those, there.
sud (*shoott*) yon, yonder, that, there (used as a pronoun).
ud (*oott*) yon, yonder, that, there (used after a noun).

463. They are used as adjectives limiting a noun or pronoun as regards time or place. They are indeclinable for person or number and always follow the noun. The latter must always be preceded by the definite article.

An duine so, " *this man* " (the man here = close at hand).
 An duine sin, " *that man* " (the man there = some distance away)
 An duine ud, " *yon man* " (the man yonder = much further away)

464. They may be used as a pronoun or attached to a pronoun :—

Tha so math,	<i>this is good.</i>	Chi mi sin,	<i>I see that.</i>
E so,	<i>this one, this person.</i>	I sin,	<i>that one.</i>
Sin agad e,	<i>there you have it.</i>	Sin ri radh,	<i>that is to say.</i>
Sud an t-aite,	<i>yonder is the place.</i>	Sud e,	<i>yonder he is.</i>

465. They may be used after the prepositions :—

An so,	<i>here.</i>	Gun sin,	<i>without that.</i>
Uaithe so,	<i>from here, hence.</i>	Mar sin,	<i>so that, like that.</i>
Mar so,	<i>thus, in this manner.</i>	Mar sud,	<i>like yon.</i>

466. A euphonic **a** appears when they are used after a preposition ending in an **s**.

As a sin,	<i>out of that.</i>	Leis a sin,	<i>with that.</i>
		Gus a so,	<i>until this, up till now.</i>

467. Used adverbially preceding a definite noun, these demonstratives become indistinguishable from adverbs of place. The verb **is** is generally understood though omitted (par. 161).

So a' bheinn,	<i>this is the hill = here is the hill.</i>
Sin am baile,	<i>that is the town = there is the town.</i>
Sud na tighean,	<i>yonder are the houses.</i>
Sin iad a' tighinn,	<i>there they are coming; that is them coming.</i>

468. You must always distinguish carefully between the demonstrative " **that** " and the relative " **that** ."

Bhuail mi an t-each sin,	<i>I struck that horse.</i>
Sin an t-each a bhuail mi,	<i>that is the horse that I struck.</i>
Is e an t-each sin a bhuail mi,	<i>It is that horse that I struck.</i>

469. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Tha a' bho so dubh. 2. 'S ann dubh a tha a' bho so. 3. 'S i bo dhubh a tha an so. 4. De tha so, a Mhairi? 5. Is e so maide mor.
 6. C'aite an robh a' bhean ud? 7. Bha i anns an tigh sin. 8. Tha am fear so fliuch. 9. Tha am fear sin 'na bhàta. 10. De tha sin?
 11. Is e sin cu. 12. De tha sud? 13. Is e sud bàta. 14. Cha'n e sud bàta. 15. Sin ri radh gu'm bheil mi 'nam bhreugair. 16. Sin agad e. 17. Leis a sin bhuail mi e. 18. Tog sin.

470. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. This dog is black. 2. That dog is not black. 3. This is a white cow. 4. Yon cow is not white. 5. What is that? 6. Who is this?

7. It is that man. 8. This boy is wet. 9. He says that he was there.
 10. With that I will go home. 11. What is that you have? 12. I do
 not know this dog. 13. This is not the book I found last night.
 14. That is they coming from the town. 15. That is the town on
 the hill there.

471. Examination Questions :—

1. Do demonstratives in Gaelic agree with the nouns which they serve to demonstrate?
2. When may we term the demonstrative an adjective?
3. Give an illustration.
4. When are demonstrative pronouns so called?
5. How are they used?
6. When do we translate "that" by **sin** and when by **a**?
7. How are they used?
8. What is the similarity between the Gaelic translation of "this" "that," and "here" "there"?

LESSON XXXIX.

472. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS, ETC.

cach, the rest, the others; **am measg chach**, among the rest.

cach-a-cheile (*kach-ü-chälü*), one another, each other.

cuid (*kootch*), a share, some (followed by the genitive of nouns, but if the noun is definite, the preposition **de**, "of," is used before the article, and the noun is put in the dative) :—**cuid chlach**, "some stones"; **cuid de na clachan**, "some of the stones"; **tha cuid ag radh**, "some are saying."

cuid na's mo, a greater share; more; **cuid na's mo chlachan**, "more stones."

cuid as mo, the greatest share, most; **cuid as mo de na clachan**, "most of the stones."

cuid-eigin (*kootch-äkin*), some one (some certain one), somebody.

cuid-fein, own; own share. **mo chuid fein**, "my own."

eile (*älü*), other (follows noun). **fear eile**, "another man."

eigin, some, any (follows noun). **fear eigin**, "some man."

feadhainn (*fyäghynn*), some people. **feadhainn eile**, "others."

fein (*fän*) (a) after a pronoun or prepositional pronoun means "self."
mi-fein, "myself"; **sinn-fein**, "ourselves."

(b) after a noun preceded by a possessive pronoun means "own"; **mo thigh fein**, "my own house."

(c) after the prepositional pronoun **le** "with," "by," **fein** means "alone"—**bha mi leam fein**, "I was alone."

Cuid in these expressions signifies any indefinite number of a whole and **cach** (or **an corr**) all the rest of it.

Cuid as a noun is fem. and very irregular, see declension, par. 282.

Thoir do chach e,

give it to the rest.

Thoir dhomhs' an corr,

give me the remainder.

- ge b' e (ga)** { Whoever (is followed by the relative pronoun **a**,
ge b' e neach { " who ")—**ge b' e neach a chluinneas**, " whoever
 (lit. whoever he was) will hear."
ge b' e ni. Whatever (is followed by the relative pronoun **a** " who ")
 —**ge b' e ni a rinn sibh**, " whatever you have done."
ge b' e aite, wherever (is followed by the relative **a**).
gach, each, every; **gach fear** (m), **gach te*** (f) " each one."
gach uile, every; **gach uile fhear**, " every man."
gin (*geen*), some one; **cha robh gin an so**, " there was no one here."
iomadh (*yeemy*), many a; **iomadh bliadhna air ais**, " many a year
 back." **iomadh uair**, many a time.
iomlan (*eem-llan*), the whole. **an t-iomlan dhiubh**, the whole of them.
morán, many (followed by the genitive—**morán sluaigh**, " many
 people," " many of people."
neach, some one, any one, an individual.
neach sam bith, any one; **neach air bith**, anyone at all.
sam bith, any (follows noun); **duine sam bith**, " any man."

The following pronouns are followed by the preposition **de**, " of " and the dative case of the noun.

uile (<i>oolü</i>), all, every.	uiread (<i>oorütt</i>)	so much.
na h-uile , the whole, all.	a leithid so (<i>lyätch</i>)	such.
a h-uile , everyone.	a leithid eile ,	such another.

473.

Vocabulary.

bheir (<i>vär</i>) irr. v.,	will give.
theid (<i>hätch</i>), irr. v.,	will go.
ni (<i>nye</i>) irr. v.,	will do.
leanaidh (<i>lyány</i>) v.,	will follow.
ni, -thean , nm. (<i>nyee</i>),	a thing, things.
cearr (<i>kyär</i>), adj.	wrong.
obair (<i>opür</i>) nf.	work.

474. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Cia meud craobh tha anns a' gharadh?
2. De tha thu ag radh?
3. Bha na gilleán anns a' phairc an de agus thilg iad clachan air cach-a-cheile.
4. Co bhríst an uinneag?
5. Bha na h-uile a' bríst-eadh uinneagan.
6. Co air bith tha an so a nis, bithidh mi an sin an nochd.
7. Tha cuid ag radh gu'm bheil mi bochd.
8. Cha 'n eil fios againn.
9. Cuin a dh' fhalbh thu.
10. Tha sinn 'nar tigh fein.
11. Chaidh gach fear d'a thigh fein.
12. Tha chuid a's mo de na clachan mora anns an achadh sin.
13. Tha na h-uile de na clachan beaga anns an achadh sin eile.
14. Ge b' e ni a rinn sibh ni fir eile.
15. Bha mi leam fein air a' bhàta.
16. Cha robh gin an sin.
17. Theid morán shluagh an sin a nis.
18. Bha na h-uile shluagh anns

* **Fear** (m) in the sense " one " is applied to all nouns masculine whether signifying persons or things, and **te** (f) " one " is similarly applied to all nouns feminine. **te air bith** any woman; **te eiginn** some woman; some one (f); **te eile** another one (f).

a' phairc. 19. Theid gach fear dachaidh. 20. Co e an duine sin agus ciod e 'obair? 21. Tha cuid ag radh gu'm bheil e 'na shaor. 22. Cuin a dh' fhalbh e? 23. Airgiod no or cha'n eil agam, ach an ni a tha agam bheir mi dhuit.

475. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Some of the stones in this field are big, but the others are small. 2. There are more big stones in that other field. 3. Most of the stones here are big. 4. I have big stones in my own field. 5. All the stones in your own field are small. 6. I will be in his house to-night, but I will go to my own house to-morrow. 7. Some say that he was alone. 8. There was no* one there last night. 9. Many people were there yesterday, but everyone had gone away. 10. It is many a year back since many people were here. 11. What is that? 12. Whatever you will do others will do also. 13. Wherever you will go the rest will follow. 14. Most of these windows are broken. 15. Every window is broken now. 16. Which of the men will go? 17. Anyone of them is ready. 18. Some say he is a joiner. 19. Everyone is saying it now. 20. They are all wrong. 21. I did not know I was wrong. 22. What will you give for this dog? 23. That dog is not yours, it is my own dog.

476. "No" in these sentences* is translated by using an indefinite pronoun preceded by a dependent form of the verb and the negative **cha**. Observe the following examples where: "no" and "none" = "not any" "not one"; "nobody" by "not anyone"; "nothing" by "not anything"; "never" by "not ever."

Cha'n eil a h-aon gun choire,	<i>there is none without fault.</i>
Cha'n eil dad an so,	<i>there is nothing here (not anything).</i>
Cha'n eil neach sam bith an sin,	<i>there is nobody there (not anyone).</i>
Cha robh a h-aon aig an tigh,	<i>there was nobody (no one) at home.</i>
Cha'n abair mi dad,	<i>I will say nothing (not anything).</i>
Cha'n fhaca mi riamh e,	<i>I never saw him.</i>
Cha toigh leam neach ach thusa,	<i>I love nobody but you.</i>

LESSON XL.

THE VERB.

477. The Gaelic verb is very different from the English verb in form and structure, and is very closely allied to the Greek verb. The whole of the tenses of our Gaelic verb are formed from its root, which is the 2nd singular imperative, the order of command, as:—**tog**, lift (thou); **buail**, strike.

478. From this root, the conjugation of verbs is effected by prefixing particles, by occasionally aspirating an initial consonant, or by affixing a termination. Sometimes all these operate together, sometimes the particle and aspiration only, and sometimes the aspiration alone.

479. All verbs in the Gaelic language are regular, and have their tenses formed in exactly the same fashion, except the ten irregular verbs which agree to no rule, and of which a list is given, showing all their parts complete. Every verb is regular in the imperative mood.

480. There are two voices, an active and a passive. The active voice is that form of a verb which shows that the subject of the sentence stands for the doer of the action expressed by the verb. The passive voice is that form of a verb which shows that the subject of the sentence stands for the object of the action expressed by the verb.

481. Compare the two statements: **bhuail mi** and **bha mi buailte**. The same word is the subject of each sentence—the nominative to each verb. But in the first statement, the subject **mi** stands for the doer of the act of **buailte**, while in the second statement, the subject **mi** stands for the object, or receiver, of the act of **buailte**. In the first sentence, the verb is said to be in the active voice; in the second, it is said to be in the passive.

482. A sentence may be changed from the active to the passive form, by turning the object into the subject, and the subject into the object.

Act.,	<i>they struck the table.</i>	bhuail iad am bord.
Pass.,	<i>the table was struck by them.</i>	bhuailteadh am bord leotha.

483. The Gaelic verb has only two time tenses, viz., the past and the future, and it has another which, for want of a better name, may be called the subjunctive, translated by the addition of the word "would," as, "he would go."

484. The indicative mood is so called because it simply points out a connection or agreement between a subject and predicate. In Gaelic it has two forms, an independent and a dependent. Many grammarians show an interro-

gative and conditional form but all these are merely the dependent form used with the respective qualifying particles which effect this change of meaning.

485. The independent or absolute form simply makes a statement and is used in affirmative propositions only, as:—**bhuail mi**, “I struck”; **bha mi a’ bualadh**, “I was striking.”

486. The dependent or conjoint form is used in negative, interrogative, and conditional clauses after the particles (par. 494).

487. The subjunctive makes a statement, but it generally does this in a hesitating and uncertain manner. It expresses a condition, motive or wish. Used in its simple form it corresponds to the English tense formed by the auxiliary “would.”

488. The imperative mood expresses a desire, whether purpose, command, or request, as:—**buail eam**, “let me strike”; **na h-abair facal**, “speak not a word.”

489. The infinitive is hardly in the strict sense a mood at all, being properly the verb used as a substantive or verbal noun denoting the energy of the verb. These verbal nouns enter largely into the composition of the compound tenses, both active and passive. Preceded by the preposition **ag, a’**, “at,” they express continuous or progressive action in combination with the verb **bi**. As only the verb **bi** has a present tense, all other verbs mark present time by this means (par. 192). Preceded by the preposition **air** in a similar idiom they express a completed action.

Infinitive, **a bhualadh**, “to strike.”
Compound present tense, **a’ bualadh**, “striking” (*lit.*, at striking).
Compound perfect tense, **air bualadh**, “struck” (*lit.*, after striking).

490. The verbal adjective is used with the substantive verbs **bi, tha, bheil**, etc., to express a form of the passive voice, as:—

Tha an dorus fosgailte, the door is open.

491. Observe that in the various tenses of the Gaelic verb (with the exception of the subjunctive and imperative) the termination of the verb throughout all the persons of

the same tense is the same in the singular and plural numbers. Hence the person of the verb is only known by its nominative.

492. The use of one sign to convey one idea is advanced in a book on speech recently published. The author says, "It is more logical to say **I is, thou is, he is**, than **I am, thou art, he is**, since logic demands that we should always use the same sign to indicate the same idea."* Again we have **I love, they love**, but **he loves**. The **s** in **loves** does not signify anything, **he loves** signifies no more than if we should say **he love**.

493. The verb **bi**, already given on page 16 and subsequent pages in all its details, is a good guide to the whole construction of a verb, and if carefully studied will help the pupil very materially to grasp and understand the various changes in the tense. It is as regards the future, subjunctive, and imperative a regular verb.

THE VERBAL PARTICLES.

494. The nature and effect of these will be already known to the student from their use with the verb **bi** in the earlier chapters, the following is a résumé.

an ? Interrogative particle. Preceding a verb changes its meaning to ask a question. The **n** changes to **m** before **b, f, m, and p**; causes eclipsis. **An** has the effect of interrogation though the verb itself be omitted.

An tog sibh ?	<i>will you lift ?</i>
Am buail sibh ?	<i>will you strike.</i>
An do bhuaill mi an dorus ?	<i>did I strike the door.</i>
An teid (<i>tchâtch</i>) thu leam ?	<i>will you go with me ?</i>
Am mi an duine ?	<i>am I the man ?</i>
Cha'n aithne dhomh an teid thu,	<i>I don't know whether you will go.</i>
cf. Gach aite an teid thu,	<i>each place where you go.</i>

cha "not." **Cha** simply negatives the meaning of the verb and is used in all the tenses except in the imperative, where we use **na** instead. **Cha**† aspirates the con-

* The Philosophy of Speech, by George Willis (1919).

† The initial aspiration of **cha** is due to a lost particle **ni, no**. In Old Gaelic we can trace it in **nicon, nocha, no chon**, etc., literally "not that." In the modern language the actual particle of negation

sonants **g**, **c**, **m**, **p**, and **b** excepting the verb **bu**; **d**, **t**, and **s** resist aspiration. **Cha'n** always aspirates **f** verbs, and the **n** is also retained before a vowel.

Cha'n fhosgail mi an dorus,	<i>I shall not open the door.</i>
Cha seinn mi,	<i>I shall not sing.</i>
Cha do thog mi,	<i>I did not lift.</i>
Cha'n iarr mi,	<i>I will not ask.</i>
Cha ghabh mi tuille,	<i>I will not take more.</i>
Cha mhi,	<i>it is not I.</i>
Cha bu tu,	<i>it was not you.</i>

na The imperative negative particle, it being used only in the imperative mood to make an imperative prohibition, as :—**na treig a' Ghaidhlig**, “forsake not the Gaelic”; **na buail**, “don't strike.”

nach The interrogative negative particle, as it asks a question in a negative manner, as :—

Nach do thog iad a' chlach?	<i>did they not lift the stone?</i>
Nach do bhristeadh i?	<i>was it not broken?</i>

ma Conditional particle “if”; it is used with the past independent and the future relative tenses of all verbs, and in the present and past independent tenses of the verb **bi**. It aspirates all consonants and requires **dh'** before all vowels, as :—

Ma bhuaileas iad,	<i>if they will strike.</i>
Ma dh' iarras sibh,	<i>if ye will ask.</i>
Ma tha mi,	<i>if I am.</i>
Ma bhuail mi,	<i>if I struck.</i>

na'n Conditional particle “if.” Complementary to **ma**. It is used where ***ma** is not used :—the past dependent and subjunctive tenses of all verbs, and the past dependent of the verb **bi**—**robh**. It does not cause aspiration.

Na'n robh mi,	<i>if I was.</i>
Na'n tiginn,	<i>if I would come.</i>
Na'n do bhuail e,	<i>if he did strike.</i>
Na'n d'ol mi,	<i>if I drank.</i>
Na'm bitheadh e,	<i>if he were.</i>
Na'n do ghlacadh e,	<i>if he would be caught.</i>

has been lost and **cha** and **cha'n** remain in appearance a negative but etymologically introductory of a dependent clause. That the **n** of **cha'n** is organic is evident when it is still retained before vowels, and also from the fact that **cha** does not aspirate **d**, **t**, or **s**.

* For note see following page.

mur Conditional negative particle "if not." It is used in all the tenses, of the dependent form, as :—

Mur glac mi, *if I will not catch.*
 Mur glacteadh iad, *if they were not caught.*
 Mur (an) do bhuaile mi, *if I did not strike.*

ged (a) Conditional particle "though" "although." It is used with the independent forms of the verb **bi—tha**, **bha**, and with the independent forms of all other verbs in the past, subjunctive, and future relative tenses. It aspirates all aspirable consonants and requires **dh'** before vowels (**ged a** being **ge + do**; it is **do** which causes aspiration). This **a** is a euphonic particle and not necessarily the relative, though it claims the rights of the relative as regards the form of the verb which follows it in the future.

Ged a tha mi, *though I am, although I am.*
 Ged a bha mi, *though I was.*
 Ged a thogas mi, *though I will lift.*
 Ged a dh' iarras mi, *though I will ask.*

ged nach Conditional negative particle "though not," "although not," used thus :—

Ged nach do bhuaile e, *though he did not strike.*
 Ged nach glacar an duine, *though the man will not be caught.*

gu'n A relative conjunctive particle serving to introduce a dependent clause. Its antecedent may or may not be expressed (par. 452).

Thubhairt e gu'n do thog e iad, *he said that he lifted them.*
 Gu'm buail mi an dorus, *that I shall strike the door.*

nach A negative relative conjunctive particle "that not," "who not," serving to introduce a dependent negative relative sentence.

Thubhairt e nach do thog e iad, *he said that he did not lift them.*
 An duine nach do thuit, *the man who did not fall.*

*Synopsis of what may be called the "Conditional Mood."

Consonant verb, Cons. verb (f+ vowel) Vowel verb,

bi be **faisg** squeeze. **ol** drink.

<i>Pres. Indpt.,</i>	ma tha mi		
<i>Past Indpt.,</i>	ma bha mi	ma dh'fhaig mi	ma dh'ol mi
<i>Past Dept.,</i>	na'n robh mi	na'n d'fhaig mi	na'n d'ol mi
<i>Fut. Rel.,</i>	ma bhitheas mi	ma dh'fhaigseas mi	ma dh'olas mi
<i>Subjunctive,</i>	na'm bithinn	na'm faisginn	na'n olainn
	<i>if I am, was,</i>	<i>if I squeezed,</i>	<i>if I drank,</i>
	<i>etc.</i>	<i>etc.</i>	<i>etc.</i>

495. It will be noticed that **nach** has three different meanings, but no ambiguity need arise, as if it is the interrogative negative it comes at the beginning of the clause or sentence without an antecedent; if the conjunctive negative it follows a verb; and if the relative negative it follows its noun.

Nach buail sibh ?	<i>will you not strike ?</i>
Thubhairt e nach do bhuail e,	<i>he said that he did not strike.</i>
'S e sin an duine nach do thuit,	<i>that is the man who did not fail.</i>

FORMATION OF THE TENSES.

496. The changes on the termination are made to one model and by the same rules, but in order to illustrate the initial changes it may be convenient to arrange all verbs into three classes according as they begin with a consonant, a vowel, or an **f**, as vowels are unaspirable, and **f** when aspirated is silent, and thus the verb would in this case begin with a vowel sound, and must be treated accordingly. Their chief difference consists in the use of the particle **do** which aspirates the verb, and which is itself aspirated and contracted **dh'** and **d'**.

LESSON XLI.

THE PAST TENSE, ACTIVE VOICE.

497. In Gaelic, the past tense may fulfil more than one function. It may take the meaning of the aorist, the perfect, and even the pluperfect tenses as we know them in English.

498. The formation of the past tense is invariably (except in the case of the ten irregular verbs and the substantive verb) effected by taking the bare root preceded by the verbal particle **do** and appending the personal pronouns. Aspiration of an aspirable consonant of a root is caused by this particle. When the verb is used in an affirmative independent sentence the particle **do** is omitted before a verb beginning with a consonant; but the aspiration remains; thus from **buail** we would have **do bhuail mi** or usually **bhuail mi, bhuail thu**, etc.

499. But if the root verb begin with a vowel, the particle is not omitted as otherwise there would be no difference between it and the future dependent tense, for aspiration of a vowel cannot otherwise be shown. The aspiration is thrown back on the particle **do** and its vowel is elided. Thus the past tense of **innis** "tell" is **dh'innis mi** "I told." As already stated a root with initial **f** is treated as if it began with a vowel, thus, **fag** "leave" becomes **dh'fhag mi** (*ghák*) "I left."

1. bhuail mi	dh'innis mi	dh'fhag mi
2. bhuail thu	dh'innis thu	dh'fhag thu
3. bhuail e	dh'innis e	dh'fhag e
etc.	etc.	etc.

500. In the dependent tense forms, the particle **do** is retained before the consonants; contracting to **d'** before vowel and **f** verbs; causing the latter to also aspirate.

Cha do bhuail mi, Cha d'innis mi (*tchynnish*), Cha d'fhag mi (*dtak*)
I did not strike. *I did not tell.* *I did not leave.*

Further ex. :—

Nach do thuit a' chraobh ?	<i>did the tree not fall ?</i>
An do mharbh an duine am fiadh ?	<i>did the man kill the deer ?</i>
An d'ol an cat am bainne ?	<i>did the cat drink the milk ?</i>
Nach d' iarr sibh (<i>tchyür</i>),	<i>did you not ask ?</i>
Cha d' fhas e mor (<i>dtás</i>),	<i>he did not grow big.</i>
Cha d' iarr e orm,	<i>he did not ask me.</i>

PAST TENSE, PASSIVE VOICE.

501. Consonant verbs aspirate the root and affix **adh** (**eadh**); vowel verbs prefix **dh'** and affix **adh**; **f** verbs combine both methods by prefixing **dh'** aspirating and affixing **adh**. The termination **eadh** stands merely by orthographical rule for **adh** (pars. 33-4-5).

Bhuaileadh mi Dh' innseadh dhomh, Dh' fhagadh mi (*ghák ügh*)
I was struck. *I was told.* *I was left.*

502. The dependent tenses are formed by prefixing **do**, **d'**, and affixing **adh** (**eadh**).

Cha do bhuaileadh mi,	<i>I was not struck.</i>
Cha d' innseadh dhomh (<i>tchynnshügh</i>),	<i>I was not told.</i>
Cha d' fhagadh mi (<i>dtákugh</i>),	<i>I was not left.</i>
Nach do bhristeadh e ?	<i>Was it not broken ?</i>
An do bhuaileadh e ?	<i>Was he struck ?</i>
Nach d' fhagadh e air a' bhord ?	<i>Was it not left on the table ?</i>

503.

Vocabulary.

tuit (*ttooytch*), fall.**ith** (*ee*), eat.**tog** (*tok*), lift.**brist**, break.**leugh** (*llyā*), read.**fas** (*fās*), grow.**chunnaic** irr. v. (*choonnyk*), saw.

504. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Bhuail mi an dorus. 2. Dh' innis e sgeul. 3. Dh' fhag mi an leabhar. 4. Cha do leugh mi an leabhar. 5. Cha do bhris e an uinneag. 6. Nach do bhris an duine an uinneag? 7. Cha do bhris. 8. Is e an gille a bhris an dorus. 9. Chunnaic mi an duine a' dol dachaidh. 10. Cha d' fhag e an leabhar anns an tigh. 11. Dh' fhagadh an leabhar leis a' ghille. 12. Dh' innseadh iad sin. 13. Nach d' fhagadh e air a' bhord? 14. Thuit an leabhar air an lar. 15. Dh' ith an gille an t-aran a dh' fhagadh air a' bhord. 16. Bhuailteadh mi anns a' cheann. 17. Bhuail mi dorus an tìghe. 18. Bhristeadh an dorus mor. 19. Thogadh an t-ord mor. 20. Dh' fhag mi a' chlach. 21. Dh' fhas an gille mor. 22. Thuit an t-each. 23. Nach do thuit an t-each? 24. Cha do thuit.

505. Translate English into Gaelic :—

1. I told a story. 2. He struck the door. 3. I left the book on the table. 4. I did not read the book. 5. When did you leave it? 6. I left it on the table in the house last night. 7. It was the big book. 8. I did not break the window. 9. The window was broken by a big man who left this hammer here. 10. Was it not some bad boys who broke this window? 11. Was it not broken with that hammer? 12. The door fell and it broke. 13. Did I tell a story? 14. You told a story to them. 15. You did not tell (to) us a story. 16. Did you read that book? 17. Did he break the window? 18. The window was struck with a stone. 19. The bread has been eaten by that boy. 20. The young man has eaten some bread. 21. Did the boy not eat the bread? 22. The boy lifted it from the table. 23. It fell on the floor. 24. Was the dog not struck by the boy? 25. The boy struck the dog with a stick. 26. Have you asked him? 27. I asked the little boy this morning. 28. If the boy did not strike it, who did?

506. Write in your note book the complete past tense of the verbs **tuit**, **ith**, and **fas**. Repeat the same verbs with the particles **cha**, **nach**, **nam**, and **mur**.

LESSON XLII.

FUTURE TENSE.

507. In the future tense of the active voice the verb has three forms—the independent, the dependent, and the relative.

508. The independent form is made by adding **idh** to the root (**aidh** to correspond to a broad vowel).

cuiridh mi,	I will put.	olaidh mi,	I will drink.
cuiridh thu,	you will put.	olaidh thu,	you will drink.
cuiridh e,	he will put.	olaidh e,	he will drink.
etc., etc.		etc., etc.	

509. The dependent form is the same as the simple root verb with the addition of the particles. No aspiration except after **cha**.

an cuir mi ?	shall I put ?
cha chuir mi,	I shall not put.
ged nach freagair mi,	although I will not answer.
an ol mi ?	shall I drink ?
cha'n ol sinn,	we shall not drink.
nach buail mi,	that I shall not strike.
gu'm buail mi,	that I shall strike.
mur (am) buail mi,	if I shall not strike.

510. The relative future as the name we give it implies is generally used after the relative pronoun, which whether present or understood causes aspiration of the root verb. The relative future ending is **as**, or **eas** to correspond to a narrow vowel. The aspirated particle **dh'** is retained before vowels and **f** (pure) but it has now no effect save for euphony having lost all trace of a time distinction.

511. Examples of the use of the relative form. It is used after a relative pronoun (including an adverbial relative) which as in English is often understood, or after the conjunctive particles **ma** "if"; **o, o'n** "since."

ma chuireas mi,	ma dh' olas mi,	ma dh' fhagas mi,
If I will put.	If I will drink.	If I will leave.
Am fear a thogas mi,	<i>the man whom I will lift, or the man who will lift me.</i>	
Ma ghlacas mi e,	<i>if I will catch him.</i>	
Ma dh' olas e am bainne,	<i>if he will drink the milk.</i>	
Am fear a ghlacas iad,	<i>the man whom they will catch, or the man who will catch them.</i>	
Am fear nach glac iad,	<i>the man whom they will not catch, or the man who will not catch them.</i>	
Mu na h-uile ni a shaoileas iad,	<i>concerning everything they can think of.</i>	
Cuin a bhuaileas mi ?	<i>when shall I strike ? (lit., what is the time such as that I shall strike at ?)</i>	

An uair a bhuaileas mi,	<i>whenever I shall strike.</i>
Cha dean iad ach na bhios ceart,	<i>they will not do but what is right.</i>
'N uair a thachras so,	<i>whenever this happens.</i>
'N uair a smaointicheas tu,	<i>whenever you think.</i>

512. The future relative is used when **an uair a** "the hour in which" (**a** being the adverbial relative) indicates indefinite frequency.

513. It may be appropriate here to notice a usage of the future in Gaelic where in English we employ the present. When an action or state is represented as being habitual or uniform, involving, for instance, such an idea as that expressed by the term "law of nature," then Gaelic uses the future, thus, **oiridh a' ghrian** "the sun rises," literally "the sun will rise." An event that happens indefinitely often the inference is that it will happen again, the uniformity of nature is involved.

With possibly the exception of the verb **bi** and another* there is no present tense in Gaelic† and there are many other languages similarly placed. Time being like space, continuous and uninterrupted, it is divisible in idea only. Present time does not exist any more than a mathematical point can be composed of parts. What we call present time is only the intermediate limit which the mind fixes between the past and the future. Every portion of time that we can mention—a year, a month, a week, an hour, a minute—is composed of past and future time. When we say "this hour" the whole hour is not present at once, it is obvious that a part is past and a part future. Again, if we connect actions with the division of time, it is obvious that actions can only be of the past and future. "I write a letter." The whole act of writing the letter is not present at once, it is composed of the part written and the part to be written, that is of past and future action. Although you have just read these lines, you use the past tense in saying so. These are illustrative sentences of the invisible line which separates past and future time, the present must be the realisation of, or won from the future. Gaelic uses the future form in this manner for the expression of the continuous present, movable and always moving into the future.

FUTURE: PASSIVE VOICE.

514. The future passive of all verbs is formed alike by adding **ar** (**ear**) to the root.

Togar a' chlach,	<i>the stone will be lifted.</i>
An togar i?	<i>will it be lifted?</i>

* **chi mi** "I see" or "I will see."

† Except in the progressive form, Lesson XXI.

Nach ithear an t-aran ?	<i>will the bread not be eaten ?</i>
Bristear an uinneag,	<i>the window will be broken.</i>
An olar an t-uisge ?	<i>will the water be drunk ?</i>
Cha bhuailear mi,	<i>I shall not be struck.</i>

515. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Cuiridh mi an t-aran air a' bhord.
2. Cha chuir mi an sin e.
3. Ma chuireas togaidh-se e.
4. An do thog iad na clachan ?
5. Ma thogas iad na clachan bithidh iad sgith.
6. Buailidh am balach beag an dorus.
7. Buailidh sinn an dorus le ord.
8. Bhuailear doruis an tighe.
9. Buailidh mi an t-each.
10. Nach buail thu an t-each sin ?
11. Ma dh'fhagas mi an cu am buail thu e ?
12. An fear a thogas mi.
13. Thubhairt e gu'm buail e am bord.
14. Togaidh mi a' chlach so.
15. Bristear na clachan.
16. C'uire a dh'fhagas thu am baile ?
17. Fagaidh mi am baile am maireach.
18. Cha 'n innis mi cuin a dh'fhagas mi so.
19. Is e am fear nach oladh am bainne.
20. 'Nuair a thachras sin an innis thu dhomh e ?
21. An ithear an t-aran ?
22. Cha'n ithear ach olar an t-uisge.
23. An ol thu am bainne so ?
24. Cha bhristear an uinneag.

516. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Will I put the bread on the table ?
2. There is bread on the table.
3. I will not put it where he will lift it.
4. They will strike the door with a stick.
5. Will they not break the door ?
6. They will not lift these stones.
7. If they will not lift these stones they will be left there.
8. I will not lift the stones.
9. The stones will not be broken.
10. John will break that window if he will throw stones.
11. The window will be broken.
12. I will put the stones away.
13. We shall not strike the window.
14. He is the man who will not drink water.
15. Will he drink milk ?
16. No. If he will not drink milk who will drink it ?
17. The cat will drink it.
18. It will not be drunk by the cat.
19. That milk will not be good.
20. If you will put it on the table someone will drink it.

LESSON XLIII.

SUBJUNCTIVE TENSE.

517. The first person of this tense is a synthetic form and is one of the few instances where it has not been superseded by the form of the third person. The remaining persons are indicated by one form with the addition of the pronoun.

518. The first person singular of consonant verbs aspirates the root and adds the termination **ainn (inn)**. the first person plural aspirates and adds **amaid (eamaid)**. The termination for the other persons is **adh (eadh)**. Vowel

verbs prefix **dh'**; and **f** verbs prefix **dh'** and also aspirate the root.

<i>Sg.</i>	1. thogainn , I would lift.	dh' innsinn , I would tell.
	2. thogadh thu	dh' innseadh thu
	3. thogadh e	dh' innseadh e
<i>Pl.</i>	1. thogamaid	dh' innseamaid
	2. thogadh sibh	dh' innseadh sibh
	3. thogadh iad	dh' innseadh iad

519. The changes on the terminations **ainn**, **eadh**, etc., stand merely by the orthographical rule.

520. The subjunctive is regularly aspirated (the result of a particle which is now lost) except after certain conjunctive particles (par. 494). Observe also the appearance of the aspirated particle **do** before vowels which would seem to be merely for euphonic reasons as it has now no other signification, it disappears after the conjunctive particles.

521. Examples of the dependent form with the particles.

an togainn ?	would I lift ?
nach togainn ?	would I not lift ?
na'n togainn,	if I would lift.
cha thogainn,	I would not lift.
mur togainn,	if I would not lift.
mur innsinn,	if I would not tell.
cha'n innsinn,	I would not tell.
an innsinn ?	would I tell ?

Thubhairt e gu'n togainn e,
Chunnaic mi an leabhar nach
togainn,

he said that I would lift it.
I saw the book which I would not
lift.

522. We use the future relative with the conjunctive particle **ma** where the fulfilment of a possible event is contemplated. We use the subjunctive with **na'n** when the case supposed is to be regarded as remotely probable or almost impossible, and also where the contrary of an actual past event is supposed and the different result contemplated.

Na'n saoilinn; chitheadh tu mi, *If I thought so: you would see me.*

SUBJUNCTIVE TENSE—PASSIVE VOICE.

523. The passive voice of the subjunctive is formed in **tadh** (**teadh**) for all the persons of all verbs, with aspiration of an initial consonant, **do** being prefixed in the case of

verbs beginning with a vowel or **f**, except after certain of the particles. This **do** has no time signification, and is only retained where euphony seems to require it.

bhuailteadh mi,	I would be struck.
thogteadh mi,	I would be lifted.
dh' iarrtadh e,	he would be asked.
dh' innsteadh dhuit,	you would be told.

524. After the particles in the dependent tense no aspiration or **dh'** is used.

an togteadh e ?	would he be lifted ?
cha thogteadh mi,	I would not be lifted.
an iarrteadh e ?	would he be asked ?
cha'n iarrteadh sinn,	we would not be asked.

525. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Bhuailinn an dorus. 2. Bhuailteadh esan an dorus. 3. Bhuailteadh an dorus le clachan. 4. Bhuailteadh an gille mor le maide. 5. Bhrisinn an uinneag leis an ord. 6. Cha togainn an t-ord. 7. Dh'innsinn air an duine. 8. Cha'n innsinn air a' ghille. 9. Thogadh iad na clachan agus thuiteadh iad air an t-sraid. 10. Ciod a dh'innsinn do 'n duine anns a' mhaduinn ? 11. Chunnac mi an duine a' leughadh an leabhair. 12. Cha leughadh an duine sin an leabhar so. 13. Na'n togadh thu e, cha'n innsinn e do 'n duine. 14. Chuirinn an leabhar air a' bhord. 15. Cha'n fhagainn e air an lar. 16. Thubhairt e gu'n tigeadh e leam. 17. Nach ithteadh an t-aran air a' bhord ? 18. Cha'n ithteadh. 19. Dh' olainn am bainne na'n fagadh i e. 20. Bristeadh Calum na clachan leis an ord throm. 21. Nach buailinn an dorus le clach ? 22. Na'm buailinn-sa an dorus am buailteadh thusa e. 23. Thubhairt e gu'm buailinn an dorus leis na clachan sin. 24. Is e am fear nach buailteadh an gille.

526. Translate English into Gaelic :—

1. I would not throw that stone. 2. The one who would throw that stone (he) would be very strong. 3. I would leave the stones there if they would not lift them. 4. The man who would not lift the book. 5. We would break the stones if you would let us. 6. If you threw a stone you would break the window. 7. The window would not be broken. 8. Would the sheep be on the hill this morning ? 9. He would lift the stone and would throw it at the boy. 10. The boy would be struck with the stone. 11. That man would strike the boy with a stick. 12. He said that he would not strike the boy. 13. Would you strike the boy. 14. Yes.

LESSON XLIV.

THE IMPERATIVE.

527. The Imperative admits of only one tense form, and the only particle applicable is the negative, which in this case is **na** not **cha**.

ACTIVE VOICE.

528. In the imperative, the pronouns are amalgamated with the verb in the 1st and 2nd persons, both singular and plural, and only in the 3rd person are pronouns added.

529. All verbs are regular in the imperative. The 1st singular adds **am** (**eam**) to the root. The 2nd singular is the root of the verb, and requires no pronoun, though for emphasis, the emphatic pronoun **thusa** may be used. The 3rd singular is formed by adding **adh** (**eadh**) to the root and attaching the pronoun or noun. The 1st plural adds **amaid** (**eamaid**) to the root. The 2nd plural adds **aibh** (**ibh**) to the root. The 3rd plural is formed by adding **adh** (**eadh**) to the root and attaching the noun or pronoun.

<i>Sg.</i>	1. togam	let me lift.	cuiream,	let me put.
	2. tog,	lift (thou).	cuir,	put (thou).
	3. togadh e,	let him lift.	cuireadh e,	let him put.
<i>Pl.</i>	1. togamaid,	let us lift.	cuireamaid,	let us put.
	2. togaibh,	lift ye.	cuiribh,	put ye.
	3. togadh iad,	let them lift.	cuireadh iad,	let them put.

530. These are negated by **na** thus making an imperative prohibition in the 2nd person, **na buail** "don't strike." It does not cause aspiration.

PASSIVE VOICE.

531. The imperative passive of all verbs is formed by adding **tar** (**tear**) to the root of the verb. The pronouns are used in all persons, no amalgamation taking place.

togtar sinn,	let us be lifted.
buailtear mi,	let me be struck.

The terminations throughout vary according to the orthographical rule.

532. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Buail an dorus. 2. Buail an dorus mor le maide. 3. Bhuaileadh iad an dorus mor. 4. Buailtear iad leis na clachan mora. 5. Tog ord agus buail an uinneag. 6. Druid an uinneag. 7. Tog a' chlach

sin. 8. Na buail an dorus. 9. Na druid an uinneag. 10. Na fag an t-slat. 11. Na bristeadh e an uinneag. 12. Ithear an t-aran an nochd. 13. Fagar an t-aran air an lar. 14. Fagamaid an t-ord anns an tigh. 15. Na treig* a' Ghaidhlig. 16. Na treig mi. 17. Cuiream an t-aran air falbh. 18. Na cuir an t-aran air falbh. 19. Olam am bainne. 20. Buailtear an t-arbhar. 21. Na cuir an cu air falbh. 22. Togtar an cat agus cuirear air falbh e. 23. Thogtadh an tigh mor air a' chreig. 24. Cuir sgian an fhir sin air a' bhord agus na brist i.

533. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Strike the big window with a hammer. 2. Let us break the window with stones. 3. Strike the door with your stick. 4. Lift that stone and throw it at that dog. 5. Let that dog alone. 6. Don't strike it. 7. Let me put that stone in my pocket. 8. Let us go away now. 9. Put this stone on the table. 10. Don't put it there. 11. Do not forsake* me. 12. Forsake not the Gaelic. 13. Eat that bread but do not drink the milk. 14. Ask that man there. 15. Let us ask him for bread. 16. Lift that dog. 17. Don't lift that dog, it is not ours. 18. Let me tell (to) you a story. 19. Tell us a long story. 20. Put the bread away now. 21. Do not eat this bread. 22. Leave that bread on the table. 23. Build (**tog**) your house on a rock.

LESSON XLV.

THE PARTICIPIAL ADJECTIVE.

534. Nearly all Gaelic verbs have a participial or verbal adjective, formed by adding **te** or **ta** to the root verb, as—**briste** "broken"; **togte**, "lifted"; this verbal adjective must not be confused with the verbal noun. When qualifying the noun it is a pure adjective. It is indeclinable for number or person, but suffers aspiration as any other adjective. Notice that some of these adjectival forms are exceptions to the orthographical rule (pars. 33-4-5).

bàta briste (*bprystchü*), a broken boat.
chora fheante (*y aunntchü*), a skinned sheep.

Tha an sgian briste, *the knife is broken.*
 Tha an sgian bhriste togte, *the broken knife is lifted.*

535. When the root verb ends in **t** only an **e** is added, when ending in **th**, the **h** is rejected and an **e** is added.

lot wound, **loite** wounded; **bath** drown, **baite** drowned.

* **treig** v. (*treek*) forsake.

536. A whole series of compound tenses of a passive form is formed from the combination of the verb **bi** in all its inflections and the verbal adjective.

Am bheil an dorus fosgailte ?	<i>is the door open ?</i>
Bha an dorus duinte,	<i>the door was shut.</i>
Bitheam dearbhte,	<i>let me be proved or tested.</i>
Cha robh mi leonta an de,	<i>I was not wounded yesterday.</i>
Tha mi sgithichte leotha,	<i>I am done or worn out with them.</i>

537. Adjectival participles of past time are followed as in English by **le** "with" before the name of the instrument or agent.

Buailte le claidheamh (<i>b'pooāyltchü</i>),	<i>struck with a sword.</i>
Leonta le Seumas (<i>llyontchü</i>),	<i>wounded by James.</i>

THE INFINITIVE.

538. The present infinitive is translated by aspirating the verbal noun and prefixing **a**, as:—**a bhi** (**bhith**), "to be"; **a bhualadh** "to strike"; and usually follows the noun instead of preceding it as in English, as:—**Thubhairt e rium an rop a tharruinn**. "He told me to pull the rope" (p. 147).

539. The infinitive of verbs commencing with a vowel take **a dh** before the verbal noun and verbs in **f** followed by a vowel take **a dh'** before the verbal noun aspirated, as:—**ol** "drink"; **a dh' ol** "to drink"; **fag** "leave"; **a dh' fhagail** "to leave" (par. 606).

540. *Vocabulary.*

ceangailte adj. (<i>kengyltchü</i>),	tied.
fuasgailte adh. (<i>foasgyltchü</i>),	liberated.

541. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. C'aite am bheil am bàta ?
2. Tha am bàta briste.
3. Tha an t-aran ithe.
4. Tha an uinneag briste.
5. Bha an sgian briste.
6. Tha an dorus mor fosgailte.
7. Tha an uinneag druidte.
8. Tha a chlach sin briste.
9. Bha a' chlach mhor sin trom.
10. Am bheil a' chlach dhubh briste ?
11. Bha an dorus briste leis an ord.
12. Bha sgian a' bhalaich math ach tha i a nis briste.
13. Bha an cu ceangailte ris a' bhord an raoir.
14. Bha e fuasgailte 'sa mhaduinn.
15. Bithidh an dorus fosgailte.
16. B'ann duinte a bha an dorus.
17. Am bheil an dorus fosgailte ?
18. Cuin' a bha an tigh togte ?

542. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Is this boat broken ?
2. No, that is the broken boat.
3. The window is broken.
4. The big door was open last night.
5. It will

not be open to-night. 6. Leave it shut now. 7. The window is shut. 8. Open the window and shut the door. 9. That man's knife was good but it is broken now. 10. The knife will be left on the table to-night. 11. If it is lifted to-night it will not be left there again. 12. Is the big stone broken? 13. All the stones will be broken. 14. If the biggest stone is not broken yet it will be broken to-day. 15. It was lifted from the floor. 16. Will the big stone be good? 17. Will you be putting it on the table? 18. We will be breaking it on the floor. 19. Was the dog tied to the table this morning? 20. He was tied to the chair this morning. 21. I will liberate him now. 22. He will be liberated at once.

543. PARADIGMS OF THE REGULAR VERB.

We illustrate a complete paradigm of three regular verbs, exhibiting the initial forms and terminations of all the simple tenses at one view. The imperative and subjunctive have been given in full. In the other tenses, the pronoun only changes, the verb being the same for all persons, sing. and plural.

<i>Imp. Root.</i>	tog	ol	fill
<i>Translation.</i>	lift.	drink.	fold.

PAST TENSE (Preterite).

<i>Active indept.</i>	‡thog mi (<i>hok</i>)	‡dh'ol mi (<i>ghawl</i>)	‡dh'fhill mi (<i>y yll</i>)
„ <i>dept.</i>	do thog mi	d'ol mi (<i>tawl</i>)	d'fhill mi (<i>dtyll</i>)
<i>Passive indept.</i>	thogadh mi	dh'oladh mi	dh'fhillleadh mi
„ <i>dept.</i>	do thogadh mi	d'oladh mi	d'fhillleadh mi

FUTURE TENSE (Habitual Present).

<i>Independent,</i>	togaidh mi	olaidh mi (<i>awly</i>)	fillidh mi (<i>fylly</i>)
<i>Dependent,</i>	*tog mi	*ol mi (<i>awl</i>)	*fill mi
<i>Relative,</i>	thogas	dh'olas	dh'fhillleas (<i>y yllüs</i>)
<i>Passive,</i>	*togar mi	*olar mi	*filllear mi

SUBJUNCTIVE TENSE (Active Voice).

‡ <i>Independent.</i>	1 thogainn	dh'olainn (<i>ghawlin</i>)	dh'fhillinn
„	2 thogadh thu	dh'oladh thu	dh'fhillleadh thu
„	3 thogadh e	dh.oladh e	dh'fhillleadh e
„ <i>pl.</i>	1 thogamaid	dh'olamaid	dh'fhillleamaid
„	2 thogadh sibh	dh.oladh sibh	dh'fhillleadh sibh
„	3 thogadh iad	dh'oladh iad	dh'fhillleadh iad
<i>Depend., sg.</i>	1 *togainn (etc.)	*olainn (etc.)	*fillinn (etc.)

SUBJUNCTIVE TENSE (Passive Voice).

<i>Independent,</i>	thogtadh mi	dh'oltadh mi	dh'fhillteadh mi
<i>Dependent,</i>	*togadh mi	*oltadh mi	*fillteadh mi

For notes see following page.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>Active</i>	1 <i>sing.</i>	togam	olam (<i>awlüm</i>)	filleam
"	2 "	tog	ol	fill
"	3 "	togadh e	oladh e	filleadh e
"	1 <i>pl.</i>	togamaid	olamaid	filleamaid
"	2 "	togaibh	olaibh	fillibh
"	3 "	togadh iad	oladh iad	filleadh iad
<i>Passive,</i>		togtar mi	oltar mi	filltear mi
<i>Infinitive pres.</i>		a thogail	a dh'ol	a dh'fhilleadh
" <i>fut.</i>		ri togail	ri ol	ri filleadh
<i>Participle pres.</i>		a' togail	ag ol	a' filleadh
" <i>past</i>		air togail	air ol	air filleadh
<i>Participial adj.</i>		togte	olte	fillte.

*These dependent forms are used with all the particles, as shown in par. 494. **Cha** aspirates all these dependent forms where the initial of the verb is **g, c, m, p,** and **b** (excepting **bu**); **cha'n** aspirates initial **f** + vowel verbs (see **cha**, par. 494).

‡ These independent forms are also used after the conditional affirmative particles:—**ma** and **ged a**

ma thog mi if I lift. **ma thogadh mi,** if I was lifted.

LESSON XLVI.

544. Conversational Exercise:—Questions and Answers.

There is in Gaelic no affirmative word corresponding to the English "yes," or negative "no." A question is put by the interrogative form of the verb and the answer must be made by the affirmative or negative form of the verb correspondent in tense to the form used in putting the question.

ciod e ?	(<i>kut ā</i>)	what is it ?
is sgian i	(<i>iss skeeun y</i>)	it is a knife.
co leis i ?	(<i>ko lāsh y</i>)	whose is it ?
cha'n eil fios agam	(<i>chan yāl fyss akum</i>)	I do not know.
nach leat-sa i ?	(<i>nach lettsha y</i>)	is it not yours ?
c'aite am bheil i ?	(<i>ka-chüm vāl y</i>)	where is it ?
tha i 'nam sporan	(<i>ha y nam sporan</i>)	it is in my purse.
an gabh thu so ?	(<i>ung gav oo sho</i>)	will you take this ?
cha ghabh	(<i>cha ghav</i>)	No—I will not.
thoir ort	(<i>hoir orst</i>)	away with you.
an d'fhag e i ?	(<i>un dak ā y</i>)	did he leave her ?
dh'fhag	(<i>ghak</i>)	yes—he did.
an do thog thu e ?	(<i>un do hok oo ā</i>)	did you lift him ?

thog	(<i>hok</i>)	yes—I did.
cha do thog	(<i>chat tao hok</i>)	no—I did not.
an leig sinn as e ?	(<i>ün-leik-shynn ass ā</i>)	shall we let him go ?
leigidh. cha leig	(<i>llākȳ, cha-llāk</i>)	yes. no.
an do phos e ?	(<i>un do fos ā</i>)	did he marry ?
cha do phos	(<i>cha do fos</i>)	no—he did not.
am pos thu mi ?	(<i>um pos oo mee</i>)	will you marry me ?
posaidh	(<i>poss-y</i>)	yes—I will.
cha phos	(<i>cha foss</i>)	no—I will not.
an leat so ?	(<i>un lähtt shoh</i>)	is this yours ?
is leam, 's leam	(<i>iss lyām, slyām</i>)	yes—it is.
an tusa a th'ann ?	(<i>ün toosü ü hänn</i>)	is this you ?
's mi. cha mhi	(<i>smee, chav-vee</i>)	yes—no.
co tha so ?	(<i>ko ha sho</i>)	who is here ?
tha mise	(<i>ha mish-ü</i>)	I am—it is I.
am bheil thu sgith ?	(<i>um vāl oo skee</i>)	are you tired ?
tha mi gle sgith	(<i>ha mee klā skee</i>)	I am very tired.
an ol thu so ?	(<i>ün awll oo sho</i>)	will you drink this ?
olaidh, cha'n ol	(<i>awllȳ chan-awll</i>)	yes—no, I will not drink.
an d'ol thu e ?	(<i>un dawll oo ā</i>)	did you drink it ?
dh' ol. cha d' ol	(<i>ghawll, chat-awll</i>)	yes—no.
cia meud uair tha e ?	(<i>ky mätt ooür ü hä ā</i>)	what time is it ?
tha e da uair	(<i>ha ā dtā ooür</i>)	it is two o'clock.
de'n uair a tha e ?	(<i>tchänn aoür ü hä ā</i>)	what o'clock is it ?
leth-uair an deidh uair	(<i>lyā ooür ün tchā ooür</i>)	half-past one.
cia an uair ?	(<i>kā ün ooür</i>)	what hour ? = when ?
mu dha uair	(<i>mü ghā ooür</i>)	about two o'clock.
eadar a h-aon agus a dha	(<i>ātür ü hōn āghus ü ghā</i>)	between one and two
an uair mu dheireadh	(<i>ün ooür mü yārūgh</i>)	the last time.
a' cheud uair	(<i>ü chyütt ooür</i>)	the first time.
aon uair	(<i>ōn ooür</i>)	one o'clock, once.
uair sam bith	(<i>ooür süm by</i>)	any time.
uair a rinn mi sin	(<i>ooür ü rynn my shyn</i>)	once I did that.
b'idh mi falbh	(<i>by my fallüv</i>)	I will be going.
tha mi a' dol	(<i>ha mee ü dawl tachȳ</i>)	I am going home.
dachaidh		
greas ort, ma ta	(<i>gräss orst, mü ta</i>)	haste you, then.
slan leat	(<i>sllawn lähtt</i>)	farewell.
an la chi's nach fhaic	(<i>ün llā ü chy snach āychk</i>)	the day I see you and the day I don't.

545. In English, as an answer to a question in which the verb is fully expressed, the mere sign of the tense suffices, the rest being understood from the question put, as:—"did you go to town to-day?" answer "I did." To the reply "I did," the verb "go" is understood. In Gaelic, no such suppression as this can occur, we must enunciate the whole verb as in the examples shown in this exercise.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

Verb Root Translation.	beir bear.	cluinn hear.	dean do.	rach go.	ruig reach, arrive.
<i>Active Ind.</i>	rug mi (<i>rook</i>)	chuala mi (<i>choontá</i>)	PAST TENSE. rinn mi (<i>rynn</i>)	chaidh mi (<i>cháy</i>)	rainig mi
<i>" Dep.</i>	do rug mi	*cuala mi	do rinn mi	deachaidh mi	do rainig mi
<i>Passive Ind.</i>	rugadh mi	chualadh mi	rinneadh mi	†chaidheas	raineadh mi
<i>" Dep.</i>	do rugadh mi	*cualas (<i>vel</i>)	d'rinneadh mi	†deachas	raineas
<i>Active Ind.</i>	beiridh mi	cluinneadh mi	FUTURE TENSE (Habitual Present). ni mi (<i>nyy</i>)	theid mi (<i>hátk</i>)	ruigidh mi
<i>" Dep.</i>	*beir mi	*cluinn mi	dean mi	teid mi (<i>chátk</i>)	ruig ní (<i>rooyk</i>)
<i>Relative</i>	bheireas	chluinneas	ni mi	rachas	ruigeas
<i>Passive Ind.</i>	beirear mi	cluinntear	nithear mi	†theidear	ruigear mi
<i>" Dep.</i>	*beirear mi	*cluinntear	deanar mi	†teidear	ruigear mi
<i>Ind. 1 sing.</i>	bheirinn	chluinninn	SUBJUNCTIVE (Active Voice). dheanainn	rachainn	ruiginn
<i>" 1 plur.</i>	bheircemaid	chluinneamaid	dheanaimid	rachamaid	ruigeamaid
<i>" 2, 3 s. & p.</i>	bheircadh thu	chluinneadh thu	dheanadh thu	rachadh thu	ruigeadh thu
<i>Dep. 1 sing.</i>	*beirinn	*cluinninn	deanainn	rachainn	ruiginn
<i>" 2, 3 s. & p.</i>	*beiridh thu	*cluinnidh thu	deanadh thu	rachadh thu	ruigeadh thu
<i>Independent</i>	bheirteadh mi	chluinnteadh mi	SUBJUNCTIVE (Passive Voice). dheantadh mi	trachainn	ruigteadh mi
<i>Dependent</i>	*beirteadh mi	*chluinnteadh mi	deantadh mi	†trachtadh	ruigteadh mi
<i>Active 1 sg.</i>	beiream	cluinneam	deanam	racham	ruigeam
<i>" 2 "</i>	beir	cluinn	dean	rach	ruig
<i>" 3 "</i>	beireadh e	cluinneadh e	deanadh e	rachadh e	ruigeadh
<i>" 1 pl.</i>	beircemaid	chluinneamaid	deanaimid	rachamaid	ruigeamaid
<i>" 2 "</i>	beiribh	chluinnibh	deanaibh	rachibh	ruigibh
<i>" 3 "</i>	beireadh iad	cluinneadh iad	deanadh iad	rachadh iad	ruigeadh iad
<i>Passive</i>	beirear mi	cluinntear mi	deantar mi	†rachtar leam	ruigtear mi
<i>Infinitive pres.</i>	a bheireadh (f)	a chluinntinn (f)	a dheanamh (m)	trachtar (m)	a ruigsinn (f)
<i>" future</i>	ri breith	ri chluinntinn	ri deanamh	ri dol	ri ruigsinn
<i>Partic. pres.</i>	a' breith	a' chluinntinn	a' deanamh	a' dol	a' ruigsinn
<i>" past</i>	air breith	air chluinntinn	air deanamh	air dol	air ruigsinn
<i>Partic. adj.</i>	beirte	cluainte	deante		ruigte

Verb Root	their, tabhair	thig	abair	faic	faigh
Translation.	give.	come.	say.	see.	get, find.
<i>Active Ind.</i>	thug mi (<i>hook</i>)	thainig mi	thubhairt mi	chunnaic mi	fhuaire mi (<i>hook-ur</i>)
" <i>Dep.</i>	*d'thainig mi	d'thainig mi	d'thubhairt mi	*faca mi	d'fhuaire mi (<i>dtóóúr</i>)
<i>Passive Ind.</i>	thugadh mi	†thaineas	†thubhairteadh	chunnacas	fhuaradh mi
" <i>Dep.</i>	d' thugadh mi	†d'thaineas	†d'thubhairteadh	*facas	d'fhuaradh mi
		FUTURE TENSE (Habitual Present).			
<i>Active Ind.</i>	bheir mi (<i>vár</i>)	thig mi (<i>heek</i>)	their mi (<i>hár</i>)	chi mi (<i>chee</i>)	gheibh mi (<i>yöv</i>)
" <i>Dep.</i>	toir mi (<i>tor</i>)	tig mi (<i>tsheek</i>)	abair mi (<i>apur</i>)	*faic mi (<i>fáchk</i>)	*faigh mi (<i>fáy</i>)
<i>Relative</i>	bheir mi	thig mi	their mi	chi mi	gheibh mi
<i>Passive Ind.</i>	bheirear mi	†thigear	†theirear	chithear mi	gheibhear mi
" <i>Dep.</i>	toirear mi	†tigear	†abairear	*faictear mi	*faightear mi
		SUBJUNCTIVE (Active Voice).			
<i>Ind. 1 sing.</i>	bheirinn	thiginn (<i>tskynn</i>)	theirinn	chithinn	gheibhinn
" <i>1 plur.</i>	bheircamaid	thigeamaid	theireamaid	chitheamaid	gheibhreamaid
" <i>2, 3 s. & p.</i>	bheireadh thu	thigeadh thu	theireadh thu	chitheadh thu	gheibheadh thu
<i>Dep. 1 sing.</i>	toirinn	tiginn	abairinn	*faicinn	*faighinn
" <i>2, 3 s. & p.</i>	tugadh thu	tigeadh thu	abaireadh thu	*faicteadh thu	*faighteadh thu
		SUBJUNCTIVE (Passive Voice).			
<i>Independent</i>	bheirteadh mi	†thigeadh	†thearteadh	chitheadh mi	gheibheadh mi
<i>Dependent</i>	tugteadh mi	†tigteadh	†abairteadh	*faicteadh mi	*faighteadh mi
		IMPERATIVE.			
<i>Active 1 sg.</i>	thoiream	thigeam	abaiream	faiceam	faigheam
" <i>2 "</i>	thoir <i>or</i> tabhair	thig	abair	faic	faigh
" <i>3 "</i>	thoireadh e	thigeadh e	abairteadh e	faiceadh e	faidheadh e
" <i>1 pl.</i>	thoircamaid	thigeamaid	abaireamaid	faiceamaid	fiagheamaid
" <i>2 "</i>	thoiribh	thigibh	abairibh, abraitbh	faicibh	faighibh
" <i>3 "</i>	thoireadh iad	thigeadh iad	abaireadh iad	faiceadh iad	faigheadh iad
<i>Passive</i>	thoirear mi	†thigtear	†abairear, abrar	faictear mi	faigheadh mi
<i>Infm. pres.</i>	a thoir (f)	a thighinn (m)	a radh (m)	a dh'fhaicinn	a fhaighinn
" <i>future</i>	ri toirt	ri tighinn	ri radh	ri faicinn	ri faighinn
<i>Partic. pres.</i>	a' toirt	a' tighinn	ag radh	a' faicinn	a' faighinn
" <i>past</i>	air toirt	air tighinn	air radh	air faicinn	air faighinn
<i>Partic. adj.</i>	tugte	raite	raite	faicte	faighte

LESSON XLVII.

THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

546. In Gaelic grammar there are ten verbs classed as irregular because they do not conform to the one uniform type of conjugation now known. To these in consistency must be added the substantive verb **bi**.† From a closer study it will be found that these verbs are rather defective than irregular. They are perfectly regular in their numbers and persons. Their irregularity consists only in this, that they want certain tenses which they borrow from certain other verbs which are in themselves quite regular.

547. Irregular verbs are always very troublesome to the learner, but we have only **ten** in Gaelic. There are over two hundred irregular verbs in English, and nearly four hundred in French.

The preceding table illustrates these ten irregular Gaelic verbs in all their simple tenses.

‡ Synopsis of the irregular verb **bi** be (thou).

	<i>Independent.</i>	<i>Dependent.</i>	<i>Impersonal forms.</i>	
<i>Present,</i>	tha	bheil, eil	thatar	bheilear, eilear
<i>Past,</i>	bha	robh	bhatar	robhtar
<i>Future,</i>	bithidh	*bi	bitear	*bitear
<i>Rel. Future,</i>	bhitheas (bhios)		bhitheas	
<i>Sunjunctive,</i>	bhithinn (<i>par.</i> 79)	*bithinn	bhiteadh	*biteadh
<i>Infinitive,</i>	bith <i>being</i> ; a bhi, bhith <i>to be</i> ; air bhi <i>have been</i> .			

Also the various forms of the assertive verb **is** and its past tense **bu**. These are also used with the tenses of the verb **bi** to express existence emphatically. **Is mi a tha** "It is I who am"—"I am indeed"; **cha mhi a bha ann** "it is not I who was in it, there—I was not there."

NOTES ON IRREGULAR VERBS, pages 138, 139.

The dependent forms are used after the particles (*par.* 494).

† These being intransitive verbs have no passive, the forms shown are impersonal or relative.

These independent forms are also used after the conditional affirmative particles **ma** and **ged a**.

ma chuala mi, if I heard. **ma chualas mi**, if I was heard.

* These forms are used with the particles as shown in *par.* 494. They are aspirated by the negative particle **cha**. Verbs in **l, n, r, d, t, s**, resist aspiration.

cha do rinn mi	I did not do.
cha do chuala mi,	I did not hear.
cha chluinnear mi,	I shall not be heard.
cha chluinn mi,	I will not hear.

NOTES ON VERBS.

548. A verb is said to be impersonal when it is used in its third person singular passive without a nominative expressed to indicate that an object is undergoing some operation. A progressive passive tense is thus formed which is similar to the Latin, but which has no analogy to the passive in English, French, etc. A series of tenses is formed from the impersonal forms of the verb **bi**; with the pronoun **le**; used as a future passive.

Thatar a' cur an t-sil,
Bhatar a' togail an tighe,
Thathas a' togail an tighe,

*the seed is being sown.
the house was being built.
they are building the house.
the house is being built.*

Bithear a' togail na cruaiche,
Thatar ag radh,
Cha'n eilear ag radh,
Cluinnear leam fuaim na gaoithe,

*let the stack be built.
it is said, people are saying.
it is not said.
(methinks) I hear the sound of
the wind.*

Buailear leam,
Chithear, chiteadh,

*it shall be struck by me.
(one) sees, might see.*

549. As in English many simple verbs require a preposition after them to make their sense complete. These prepositional verbs always take their object in the dative case after the preposition. If a pronoun is the object it becomes a prepositional pronoun. The verbs assume different meanings according to the pronoun used.

Leig as mo lamh,
Ghabh e air a bhi gu tinn,
Ghabh iad air; orm,
Gabh air a' chu
Gabh ris,
Gabh a null; a nuas,
Eisd ris an duine,
Abair ri Tomas bualadh,
Cuir an clo,
Cuir an aghaidh,

*let go my hand.
he pretended to be sick.
they beat (punished) him; me
strike the dog.
acknowledge, confess.
go over; come down.
listen to the man.
tell Thomas to strike.
put in type, print.
put against, oppose.*

550. The irregular verb **beir** means "bear" or "bring forth"—**rug i mac** "she bore a son"; **rug a' bho** "the cow calved." But with the preposition **air** it conveys the further meanings of "catching," "overtaking," etc.

Rug mi air Domhnull,
Beir air Iain; beir orm,
Rug mi air an each,
Cha bheir mi air an nochd,
Beiridh mi orra am maireach,
Ruigidh mi air an ord,
An ruig thu air a' chraoibh?

*I caught Donald.
catch John, catch me.
I caught the horse.
I will not catch him to-night.
I will catch them to-morrow.
I will reach for the hammer.
can you reach the tree?*

551. **Thoir** or **tabhair** means "give*, take, bring," etc., dependent on the preposition used. Note the following:—

Thoir a nall,	<i>reach or fetch here.</i>
Thoir air falbh ; thairis,	<i>take away ; give over.</i>
Thug e aran do Sheumas,	<i>he gave bread to James.</i>
Thug e a steach an cu,	<i>he brought in the dog.</i>
Thug e am peann leis,	<i>he took the pen with him.</i>
Thug e sgillinn air paipeir,	<i>he gave a penny for a paper.</i>
Thug e air Mairi suidhe,	<i>he made Mary sit.</i>
Thug sibh uam-sa mo chlann	<i>you have taken from me my children.</i>
Thug mi air,	<i>I compelled him.</i>

552. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Thubhairt e gu'n robh mise air falbh. 2. Cha d'thubhairt ach tha e ag radh gu'm bheil thu-sa a' falbh. 3. Ma thubhairt e sin bha e cearr. 4. Ged nach abairinn ni sam bith ris bhristeadh e an dorus. 5. Ged a theirinn ris gu'n robh e cearr, theireadh esan gu'n robh e fhein ceart. 6. Beir air an duine is gheibh thu sgian. 7. Beiridh mi air ma gheibh mi sgillinn. 8. An do rug thu air ? 9. Cha do rug ach beiridh mi air am maireach. 10. Thubhairt an ciobair nach fhaighinn caora no uan. 11. Mur faigh mise tigh m' athar fagaidh mi an duthaich. 12. Cha'n fhaigh thu sin gu brath. 13. Co fhuair an t-iasg so ? 14. Am faigh mise iasg ? 15. Chunnaic mise duine dubh ach cha 'n fhaca tusa duine gorm a riamh. 16. Ged nach fhaca sinn am bàta chunnaic sinn na h-iasgairean. 17. Tha mise ag radh gu'm faic duine sam bith a' ghealach. 18. Tha mi a' faicinn gu'm bheil thusa gle mhath. 19. An cluinn duine dall ceol ? 20. Cluinnidh duine dall ceol ged nach fhaic e am fear-ciuil. 21. Ma cluinneas mise ceol bithidh mi sona. 22. An d' thug thusa an leabhar do 'n ghille ? 23. Cha d' thug. 24. An d' thainig na gillean eile ? 25. Cha d' thainig ach tha iad a' tighinn anns an fhasgar. 26. Nach tig thu do 'n bhaile mhor. 27. An deachaidh na fir do 'n bhaile ? 28. Cha deach, ach theid iad do 'n choille an diugh. 29. Mur teid iad do 'n choille an diugh cha teid iad ann tuille. 30. Ma ruigeas mi anns a' mhaduinn an toir thu dhomh deoch bhainne ? 31. Tha mi a' dol a dheanamh bhrog. 32. Ni mi sin is cha bhi sinn fada 'ga ruigsinn. 33. Am bheil thu a' dol a dh' iasgach an nochd ? 34. Tha ; na'n ruigeamaid an abhainn roimh choig uairean dheana-maid iasgach math. 35. Ni mi sin is cha bhi sinn fada 'ga ruigsinn. 36. An dean thu so ? 37. Ni. 38. Co e, a rinn so ? 39. Rinn mise e agus ni mi e a ris.

553. Translate English into Gaelic:—

1. He did not get it yesterday, but he got it to-day. 2. What will he get to-morrow ? 3. The boat has been found. 4. I went home

* According to the English dictionary the verb "give" in English has over 100 different meanings, primary, secondary, and from the aid of prepositions.

and saw my father. 5. When I go home I will see the land I was born in. 6. Let it be done now. 7. He did not do it, but if you asked him he would do it. 8. He will not go away yet. 9. Did he not go home yesterday? 10. No, but he will go home to-morrow. 11. Give me that and I will give you this. 12. Where did you find it? 13. If you will catch him I will give you a shilling. 14. I would not catch a black cat for any money. 15. The white cow calved yesterday. 16. I heard you in the house last night. 17. Will you see the farmer to-day? 18. If I do not, I will see him to-morrow. 19. If I should see him to-night I will get milk from him. 20. Let me see, it is a very dark night and he will not come. 21. When will he come to the town? 22. He will go to the town to-morrow. 23. Leave that and do this. 24. When did she arrive home last night? 25. That man came to our house to-day and he will come again to-morrow. 26. He did not go fishing yesterday. 27. This is the man who made the boat. 28. Let us go and see it. 29. You will get a book at our house if you will go. 30. Will I get it? 31. Give me that book. 32. A noise was heard here last night. 33. Where were you born? 34. I was born in Glasgow, but I have Gaelic. 35. Did he do that? 36. Will he do it for me? 37. Yes.

LESSON XLVIII.

THE VERBAL NOUN.

554. The verbal noun in Gaelic corresponds to the infinitive, participle and gerund in English grammar. In Gaelic it is in all respects a noun denoting action or energy of the verb. Verbal nouns are used in conjunction with the verb **bi** to form the present tense of Gaelic verbs which is thus a compound present tense. Other compound tenses are also formed. They are generally preceded by a preposition which marks the time of the action, thus **bualadh** "striking"; **a' bualadh** "a-striking," literally "at striking"—(**a' ag, aig** "at"); **air bualadh** "after striking."

tha mi a' bualadh, I am at striking; I am striking, *or* I strike.

555. By adding a terminal **adh, ail,** etc. (which corresponds to "ing" etc. in English) to the root of a Gaelic verb a word partaking of the quality of noun and verb will be formed. Thus by adding **adh** to **trus** "gather" we have **trusadh,** which as a noun signifies "a gathering"; and again when preceded by the preposition **aig (ag)** acquires the verbal signification of "gathering." These are pro-

perly termed participles, participating as they do in the qualities of more than one part of speech.

556. Verbal nouns are always nouns. They may be governed by prepositions qualified by adjectives, used (many of them) in the plural number, followed by a genitive case, and so on. They can never govern an accusative or objective case as verbs can. They are generally of the masculine gender and are declined through the cases as other nouns.

trusadh (m) a gathering.

N.	trusadh	a gathering.	trusaidheam	gatherings.
G.	trusaidh	of a gathering.	trusadh	of gatherings.
D.	(air) trusadh	(on) a gathering	(air) trusaidhean	(on) gatherings
V.	A thrusaidh	O gathering.	O thrusadha	O gatherings.

FORMATION OF THE VERBAL NOUN.

557. In English there is no rule for the formation of a noun of action. It may be identical with the simple root, or it may be formed by adding one of a variety of endings: "restraint," "prohibition," "growth," "departure," "gathering," etc.

558. So in Gaelic there is no rule for the formation of a verbal noun. It may be identical with the root verb, or it may add one of a variety of endings, as:—**adh**, **eadh**, **amh**, **ail**, **inn**; some contract while others again are totally different.

559. The general rule is to add **adh** (**eadh**) to the root verb.

breab	(<i>bprāp</i>)	kick.	breabadh	(<i>bprāp-ūgh</i>)	kicking.
brist	(<i>bpryshtch</i>)	break.	bristeadh	(<i>bprysh-tchugh</i>)	breaking.
taom	(<i>tōm</i>)	pour.	taomadh	(<i>tōm ūgh</i>)	pouring.

560. A number add **adh** to a contracted root.

buail	(<i>boal</i>)	strike.	bualadh	(<i>boal-ūgh</i>)	striking.
duisg	(<i>dooshk</i>)	awake.	dusgadh	(<i>dooshkūgh</i>)	awakening.
fosgail	(<i>foskūl</i>)	open.	fosgladh	(<i>fosklūgh</i>)	opening.
innis	(<i>yunnysh</i>)	tell.	innseadh	(<i>ynnshūgh</i>)	telling.

561. A number use the root as the verbal noun.

fas	(<i>fās</i>)	grow, growing.	ol	(<i>awl</i>)	drink, drinking.
falbh	(<i>fallūw</i>)	go, going.	ruith	(<i>rooyh</i>)	run, running.
snamh	(<i>snav</i>)	swim, swimming.	seinn	(<i>shāynn</i>)	sing, singing.

562. A number leave out the last small vowel and substitute a broad.

caidil	(<i>katchyl</i>)	sleep.	cadal	(<i>ka ttüll</i>)	sleeping.
cail	(<i>ka yll</i>)	lose.	call	(<i>ka ooll</i>)	losing.
ceangail	(<i>kyangül</i>)	tie, bind.	ceangal	(<i>kyangul</i>)	tying.
cuir	(<i>koor</i>)	put, sow.	cur	(<i>koor</i>)	putting, sowing.
iasgaich	(<i>y asküch</i>)	fish.	iasgach	(<i>y asküch</i>)	fishing.

563. Many verbs ending in **air** add a **t**.

labhair	(<i>llavür</i>)	speak.	labhairt	(<i>llavürtch</i>)	speaking.
tachair	(<i>ttachür</i>)	meet.	tachairt	(<i>ttachürtch</i>)	meeting.
freagair	(<i>fräkür</i>)	answer.	freagairt	(<i>fräkürtch</i>)	answering.

564. Many monosyllable verbs add **sinn**.

creid	(<i>krätch</i>)	believe.	creidsinn	(<i>crätchynn</i>)	believing.
ruig	(<i>rooyk</i>)	reach.	ruigsinn	(<i>rooykshynn</i>)	reaching.
treig	(<i>träyk</i>)	forsake.	treigsinn	(<i>tträkshynn</i>)	forsaking.

565. A number of monosyllables add **tinn**, which becomes **tuinn** when the root verb is broad.

cinn	(<i>kyinn</i>)	grow.	cinntinn	(<i>kyntchyn</i>)	growing.
cluinn	(<i>hlooynn</i>)	hear.	cluinntinn	(<i>clooyntchynn</i>)	hearing.
seall	(<i>shaool</i>)	see, look.	sealltuinn	(<i>shaultyn</i>)	looking.

566. A number add **ail** or **eil** to the root verb.

gabh	(<i>gav</i>)	take.	gabhail	(<i>gavül</i>)	taking.
tog	(<i>tok</i>)	lift, build.	togail	(<i>tokül</i>)	lifting.
fag	(<i>fäk</i>)	leave.	fagail	(<i>fäkül</i>)	leaving.
tilg	(<i>cheeleek</i>)	throw.	tilgeil	(<i>cheeleekül</i>)	throwing.

567. A few verbs form their verbal nouns irregularly.

marcaich	(<i>markäch</i>)	ride.	marcachd	(<i>marcachk</i>)	riding.
thig	(<i>heek</i>)	come.	tighinn	(<i>tchy ynn</i>)	coming.
seas	(<i>shäs</i>)	stand.	seasamh	(<i>shässüv</i>)	standing.
gluais	(<i>glooash</i>)	move.	gluasad	(<i>gloo as üd</i>)	moving.
iarr	(<i>eeür</i>)	ask.	iarraidh	(<i>eear-y</i>)	asking.
suidh	(<i>soo-y</i>)	sit.	suidhe	(<i>soo-y ü</i>)	sitting.
tuit	(<i>tootch</i>)	fall.	tuiteam	(<i>tooh tchüm</i>)	falling.

568. In vocabularies and dictionaries, the verbal noun, when not regularly formed, is usually given as well as the root verb.

GOVERNMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE.

569. A transitive participle takes its noun object in the genitive case, after the participle.

Bha an gille ag itheadh arain, *the lad was eating bread.*

Arain is the genitive case of **aran**, after **ag itheadh**. Literally the sentence is: The lad was at the eating of bread.

Tha an t-each a' breabadh an doruis, *the horse is kicking the door.*

GOVERNMENT OF THE INFINITIVE.

575. One verb governs another in the infinitive.

Tha sinn a' dol a bhualadh, *we are going to strike.*

576. The object of a transitive infinitive expressing purpose stands after the infinitive in the genitive case.

Thainig mi a bhualadh an doruis, *I came to strike the door.*

Chaidh mi a dh' ol an uisge, *I went to drink the water.*

577. If the object be a pronoun, the possessive pronoun or an emphatic personal takes its place. We use the preposition **gu**.

Tha e a' dol g'ur bualadh, *he is going to strike you.*

Thog e lamh g'a bhualadh, *he raised a hand to strike him.*

Feumaidh Iain mise 'phaidheadh, *John must pay me.*

578. When the object to a transitive verb does not denote purpose it stands before the infinitive in the accusative case. All those compound expressions which do duty for verbs come under this rule as the infinitive and its noun are really the subject of these sentences, the predicate being the noun or adjective which immediately follows **is**.

Is toigh leam an leabhar a leughadh* *I wish or desire to read the book.*

Dh'iarr e orm an dorus a dhunadh, *he asked me to shut the door.*

* *cf.* Is toigh leam leughadh an leabhair,

The reading of the book (by another) is a pleasure to me.

579. In a few instances, principally intransitives, the infinitive sign is not required and no aspiration takes place.

Feumaidh mi suidhe, *I must sit.*

Cha'n fheum thu seasamh, *you must not stand.*

580. Those verbs which require a preposition after them to complete their sense take their object after the infinitive. The object is governed in the dative case by the preposition. A pronoun object becomes a prepositional pronoun.

Chaidh mi a bhreith air an each, *I went to catch the horse.*

Cha deachaidh mi a bhreith air, *I did not go to catch him.*

Theid mi a bhreith orra, *I will go to catch them.*

581. **ri**, signifying "to," has the effect of changing the sense to that of future passive (par. 607).

Tha an leabhar ri fhaicinn, *the book is to be seen.*

Tha iad ri tighinn, *they are to come.*

582. In English a noun of action can usually be substituted for the infinitive, and in translating it with the possessive pronoun it is better to do so. Consider the effect of "my to come" with "my coming."

Is fhearr suidhe goirid na seasamh fada,

*It is better to sit short than to stand long.
better short sitting than long-standing.*

Bonnach a mhealladh na cloinne,

A bannock for deceiving of (not to deceive) the children.

Thainig orm falbh,

(It came on me to go) I was obliged going.

Bha mi am shuidhe,

(I was in my to sit) I was (in my) sitting.

583. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. De tha e a' deanamh ? 2. Tha e a' seinn a nis. 3. De bha e a' deanamh ? 4. Bha e ag iasgach anns an t-sruth. 5. De bha iad a' togail ? 6. Bha iad a' togail tighe. 7. Caite am bheil e a' dol ? 8. Tha e a' dol g'ur bualadh. 9. Thog e cas g'a bhreabadh. 10. Thainig e gu mo phiuthar 'fhaicinn. 11. Tha mi a' dol g'a bhualadh. 12. Dh'iarr e orm an dorus a dhunadh. 13. De bhithas e a' deanamh ? 14. Bithidh e a' ruith dhachaidh. 15. Tha mi a' tighinn dhachaidh a nis. 16. De tha thu ag iarraidh ? 17. Am bheil d' athair a' dol a dh' iasgach ? 18. Thainig a' chaileag bheag a dh' fhosgladh an doruis. 19. Tha an gille mor a' trusadh nan clachan. 20. Bha na daoine a' labhairt ri cach-a-cheile. 21. Tha an ciobair a' dol dhachaidh anns a' mhaduinn. 22. Bha na fir 'nan suidhe. 23. Tha e 'na shuidhe. 24. Tha mi am sheasamh an so. 25. Thog e lamh g'ar bualadh. 26. Tha e a' togail an uird mhoir. 27. Tha an gille a' bristeadh na cloiche.

584. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. The little girl will be opening the door. 2. What is he doing now ? 3. He is fishing in the stream. 4. What is that man doing ? 5. He is going to strike the boy. 6. What is that other man doing ? 7. He is coming to kick the dog. 8. I will lift my left hand to strike him. 9. He is breaking my stick. 10. He was eating bread this morning. 11. He will be going home now. 12. Will the boy be running away ? 13. The men were sitting at the door. 14. What were you saying ? 15. The little boy was gathering stones. 16. What were you asking ? 17. Will your father be going fishing this evening ? 18. The boy is breaking stones with a hammer. 19. He will be striking us with the stones. 20. We were breaking them. 21. James is putting bread on the table. 22. They were running home. 23. What are you building ? 24. I am building a small house. 25. John is striking the door. 26. He came to see my sister last night. 27. I will be striking him. 28. He has not been drinking water. 29. Who says that ?

LESSON XLIX.

SYNOPSIS OF A GAELIC VERB.

585. When the verb is alike in the three persons of both numbers as is the case in most of the tenses, it will be enough to show the 1st person singular only, as a sufficient guide to all the other persons. The remaining persons can be formed by changing the pronoun. The following shows the independent form. By the aid of the prepositions **a'**, **ag**, and **air**, we have nearly as complete a set of tenses as can be formed in English.

INDICATIVE ACTIVE.

<i>Pres. Progres.</i>	Tha mi a' bualadh	<i>I am striking (at striking).</i>
<i>„ Perfect,</i>	Tha mi air bualadh,	<i>I have struck (after striking).</i>
<i>„ Perfect</i>	Tha mi air bhi a'	<i>I have been striking (I am</i>
<i>(contin.)</i>	bualadh,	<i>after being striking).</i>
<i>Fut. Indef.</i>	Buailidh mi,	<i>I shall strike.</i>
<i>„ Progress.</i>	Bithidh mi a' bualadh,	<i>I shall be striking.</i>
<i>„ Perfect,</i>	Bithidh mi air bualadh,	<i>I shall have struck.</i>
<i>„ Perfect</i>	Bithidh mi air bhi a'	<i>I shall have been striking</i>
<i>(contin.)</i>	bualadh,	<i>(after being striking).</i>
<i>Past Indef.</i>	Bhuail mi,	<i>I struck.</i>
<i>„ Progres.</i>	Bha mi a' bualadh,	<i>I was striking (a-striking).</i>
<i>„ Perfect,</i>	Bha mi air bualadh,	<i>I had struck (after striking).</i>
<i>„ „ (cont.)</i>	Bha mi air bhi a' bualadh,	<i>I had been striking.</i>

INDICATIVE PASSIVE.

<i>Pres. Defin.,</i>	Tha mi buailte,	<i>I am struck.</i>
<i>„ Progres.</i>	Tha mi 'gam bhualadh,	<i>I am being struck.</i>
<i>„ Perfect,</i>	Tha mi air mo bhualadh	<i>I have been struck.</i>
<i>Fut. Indef.,</i>	Bithidh mi buailte,	<i>I shall be struck.</i>
	Buailtear mi,	<i>I shall be struck.</i>
<i>„ Perfect,</i>	Bithidh mi air mo	<i>I will have been struck. (I</i>
	bhualadh,	<i>will be after my striking).</i>
<i>Past Indef.,</i>	Bhuailteadh mi	<i>I was struck.</i>
	Bha mi buailte,	<i>I was struck.</i>
<i>„ Progres.,</i>	Bha mi 'gam bhualadh,	<i>I was being struck.</i>
<i>„ Perfect,</i>	Bha mi air mo bhualadh	<i>I had been struck.</i>
<i>Subjun. Active</i>	Bhithinn a' bualadh,	<i>I would be striking.</i>
	Bhuailinn,	<i>I would strike.</i>
	Bhithinn air bualadh,	<i>I would have struck.</i>
<i>„ Passive</i>	Bhithinn 'gam bhualadh	<i>I would be struck.</i>
	Bhithinn buailte,	<i>I would be struck.</i>
	Bhuailteadh mi,	<i>I would be struck.</i>
	Bhithinn air mo	<i>I would have been struck.</i>
	bhualadh,	<i>(would have been after my striking)</i>

Exercise—Write a similar synopsis of the verbs, **ol** and **fag**.

LESSON L.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

586. There are a number of verbs which are deficient or defective, being used in one tense or part of a tense only. The following are the more commonly used forms of these verbs.

arsa, ars', **orsa, ors'**, said, quoth.

Used in the past tense only :

Arsa mise, *said I.* Ars' esan, *said he.*

theab (*hāhp*) had almost, had nearly, was like.

Used in the past tense only, affirmative, negative, etc. :

Theab mi tuiteam, *I nearly fell.*
An do theab e tuiteam, *did he almost fall.*
Ged nach do theab mi tuiteam, *though I was not like falling.*

feuch (*fāch*) behold, see ; **feuchaibh** behold ye.

These are the only forms. **feuch** "to show" is not defective.

tiugainn (*tchookynn*) ; **tiugainnibh** ; come away.

Used in these persons of the imperative only :

Eirich agus tiugainn O ! *rise and let us come away !*
Tiugainnibh, *come along.*

trothad (*trho-üt*) ; **trothadaibh** ; come here ; come hither.

is (*iss*) is, are, etc. ; **bu** was, were, etc.

The assertive form of the verb **bí** ; used in the present and past tenses only (see Lesson XVII.).

AUXILIARY VERBS.

587. The idea of possibility, permission, duty, necessity, as conveyed by the English verbs "may," "might," "must," "ought," etc.

We have in Gaelic two regular verbs **faod** (*föd*) and **feum** (*fām*) which are used with the verbal nouns of other verbs and have the same force as English "may" and "must," etc.

faodaidh mi (*föd-y*) I may.

feumaidh mi (*fām-y*) I must.

dh'fhaodainn (*ghödynn*) I might.

dh'fheumainn (*yāmynn*) I would need.

dh'fhaod mi (*yöd*) I might have.

dh'fheum (*yām*) I would need have.

an d'fhaod mi ? (*dödt*) might I ?

an d'fheum mi ? (*dyām*) had I to ?

cha d'fhaod mi, I might not have,

cha d'fheum mi, I must not.

am faod mi ? may I ?

am feum mi ? must I ?

Further examples with the infinitive :—

Faodaidh mi falbh am maireach,	<i>I may go to-morrow.</i>
Am faod mi falbh ?	<i>may I go ?</i>
Ma dh'fhaodas mi falbh (<i>yōdjūs</i>),	<i>if I may go.</i>
Dh'fhaod mi falbh,	<i>I might have gone.</i>
Na'n d'fhaod mi falbh,	<i>if I might have gone.</i>
Ma dh'fheumas e falbh (<i>yāmūs</i>),	<i>if he must go.</i>
Faodar a bualadh (<i>fōdür</i>),	<i>she may be struck.</i>
Feumar a bualadh (<i>fāmür</i>),	<i>she must be struck.</i>
Feumaidh tu a bualadh,	<i>you must strike her.</i>
Faodaidh e a' chlach a bhualadh,	<i>he may strike the stone.</i>

COMPOSITE PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.

588. There is a very important class of idioms in connection with the verbs **is** and **bu** and the preposition **le** "with." These idioms relate to the action of the will, intellect, the memory, the fancy, and at times the passions.

English verbs such as "I choose"; "I desire"; "I disregard"; "I pity"; "I am fond"; "I prefer"; "I love"; "I remember"; "I wonder"; "I am surprised." It seems "right," "wrong," "poor," "just," "bad," "painful," and many others of kindred meaning are thus rendered into Gaelic.

is miann leam (<i>mee-ün</i>),	I wish, or desire (it is a wish with me)
is toigh leam (<i>toi</i>),	I love (it is love with me).
is eol leam (<i>yol</i>),	I know (it is knowledge with me).
is coma leam,	I don't care for (it is indifference with me).
is cuimhne leam (<i>koo ynü</i>),	I remember (it is memory with me).
is fearr leam (<i>fyärr</i>),	I prefer (it is better with me).
is deise leam (<i>tchāshü</i>),	I think it is pretty <i>or</i> it seems easier to me.
is annsa leam, (<i>aunnsü</i>),	I prefer (it is more dear with me).
is miosa leam (<i>meesü</i>),	I pity (it is worse with me).
is maith leam (<i>mah</i>),	I like. I am glad (it is good with me).

An object to these verbs is placed next after the pronoun ; **Is toigh leam Mairi** "I love Mary—I am fond of Mary." They are also used with all the verbal particles (494) **Ma's toigh leam Mairi** "If I do love Mary," etc.

589. Here is an example of this last idiom in a very simple sentence. **Is maith dhomh e ach cha mhaith leam e** (*lit.*), "It is good for me but it is not good with me." Here the first clause may be translated literally, but the second is

idiomatic and signifies "I do not like it" (though, perhaps, it is good for me).

Many of these idioms are used in comparison, thus :—**Is fearr leam or na airgid** "I prefer gold to silver."

590. The preposition **do** "to" and the prepositional pronouns formed from it also combine with the verbs **is** and **bu** in representing a number of English verbs, as :—**is urrainn do** "can"; **is urrainn domh** "I can"; **is aithne do** "know."

is aithne¹ domh,	I know.	is mithich³ domh,	it is time for me.
is eudar² domh,	I must.	is eiginn⁴ domh,	I must.
is urrainn⁵ domh,	I can.	is urrainn duinn,	we can.
b' urrainn domh,	I could.	b' urrainn duinn,	we could.
is coir dhomh,	I ought.	is eudar dhomh,	I must.
bu choir dhomh,	I ought.	b' eudar dhomh,	I was obliged (had to).

1 *anü*; 2 *ādūr*; 3 *myych*; 4 *ākynn*; 5 *oor ynn*.

591.

EXERCISES.

Vocabulary.

gus, prep. to, till.

air ais, adv., back.

592. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Faodaidh tu suidhe ach cha'n fhaod thu seasamh. 2. Am faod mi seasamh air an lar. 3. Am feum thu dol air ais? 4. Feumaidh thu. 5. Ma dh' fheumas mi dol dachaidh cha till mi. 6. Co a dh' fhaodas tighinn? 7. Ma dh' fheumas sibh, feumaidh sibh. 8. Cha'n urrainn duinn tilleadh. 9. Is coir duibh tighinn. 10. Is aithne dhomh gur coir dhuinn tighinn ach cha'n urrainn dhuinn. 11. Theab mi tuiteam an trath so. 12. Cha'n urrainn dhuibh fhaotainn a nis. 13. Cha'n aithne dhomh de a thachras. 14. Is eudar dhuinn a bhi samhach. 15. Feumaidh sibh a bhi 'nur seasamh. 16. Is coir do na caileagan a bhi samhach. 17. Deanadh e na's urrainn da. 18. Nach b' urrainn sibh an tigh fhaicinn? 19. Cha b' urrainn doibh a bhi ann aig seachd uairean. 20. Eirich agus tiugainn O! ars' esan.

593. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. I must go if I cannot stay. 2. May I not stay longer? 3. No. You must go. 4. You ought not to say that. 5. I know that I ought not. 6. Do you know what it is? 7. No. You ought to know (*fios a bhi agaibh*). 8. Do you like milk or do you prefer beer. 9. I do not like beer. 10. You may go now. 11. Must I go now? 12. Yes. 13. He had to stay till the morning. 14. If he had to go

he ought to have told us. 15. You may stay if you wish, but I know you ought to go. 16. He did not do what he could. 17. He ought to have done what he could. 18. If he does not do what he can, he ought not to be here. 19. He could not see, but he could speak. 20. You ought to tell what you know. 21. I might see you in the evening.

LESSON LI.

594.

THE PREPOSITION.

aig , at.	fo (<i>foh</i>) under, below.
air , on, upon.	gu, gus (<i>goo, goos</i>) to, towards.
anns (<i>awns</i>) in.	le, leis , with, by.
ann an , in a.	re (<i>rā</i>) during, for.
anns an , in the.	ri (<i>ree</i>) ris , at, to, against.
a, as , out of.	mu , about, around.
bho, o , from, out of.	roimh (<i>roye</i>) before.
de (<i>ichā</i>) of.	thar (<i>har</i>) over, across.
do , to, into.	troimh (<i>troee</i>) trid , through.
eadar (<i>ātūr</i>) between.	mar (<i>mūr</i>) like.
gun , without.	

anns, as, gus, leis, ris, are the forms used before the article or relative pronouns.

595. The simple prepositions govern the dative case, so that when we have an indefinite noun following a preposition we have :—

The dative singular masculine like the nominative singular.

The dative singular feminine like the genitive feminine with the omission of the final **e**.

The dative plural masculine like the genitive singular.

The dative plural feminine adds **an** or **ean** to the nominative singular.

596. But when the noun is definite and we have the preposition followed by the definite article, aspiration takes place in the dative case singular, both masculine and feminine. Definite nouns with an initial **d, l, n, r, s, t**, do not aspirate (par. 38).

Indefinite.

air bord ,	on a table.
air gruaidh ,	on a cheek.
ann am baile ,	in a town.

Definite.

air a' bhord ,	on the table.
air a' ghruaidh ,	on the cheek.
anns a' bhaile ,	in the town.

Indefinite.

ann an dorus,	in a door.
ann an cathair,	in a chair.
a tigh,	out of a house.
le bata,	with a stick.
ri duine,	to a man.

Definite.

anns an dorus,	in the door.
anns a' chathair,	in the chair.
as an tigh,	out of the house.
leis a' bhata,	with the stick.
ris an duine,	with the man.

597. The prepositions **do** "to"; **fo** "under"; **bho** "from"; **mar** "like" "as"; **mu** "about"; **troimh** "through"; **roimh** "before"; **de** "of" aspirate in the dative singular both definite and indefinite nouns as well as conforming to the rule aforementioned.

598. Observe that an indefinite noun beginning with **d**, **t**, **s**, aspirates, but when the same noun is definite it resists aspiration as the effect of following the dental **n** of the article.

Indefinite.

de cheo,	of mist.
do chill,	to a grave.
fo bhord,	under a table.
mar chraoibh,	like a tree.
mu phairt,	about a part.
o mhod,	from a court.
roimh ghunna	before a gun.
troimh thir,	through a land.
fo dhorn,	under a fist.
do shuil,	to an eye.

Definite.

de'n cheo,	of the mist.
do'n chill,	to the grave.
fo'n bhord,	under the table.
mar a' chraobh,	like the tree.
mu'n phairt,	about the part.
o'n mhod,	from the court.
roimh'n ghunna	before the gun.
troimh'n tir,	through the land.
fo'n dorn,	under the fist.
do'n t-suil,	to the eye.

599. The simple Gaelic preposition is capable of being used very extensively. The most peculiar of its uses is to form a compound with the pronouns, of which we give a complete list. The contents of this table should be familiar to every would-be-learner of Gaelic (par. 404).

600. **eadar** "between" governs the accusative case which is the same as the nominative in Gaelic.

Eadar fear agus bean,	<i>between man and wife.</i>
Eadar a' chlach agus a' chraobh,	<i>between the stone and the tree.</i>

THE PREPOSITION **ann** "IN."

601. **ann an**, **ann am**. Observe the duplication of the preposition **ann** here, it is used in this form before an indefinite noun both singular and plural and may be called an emphatic form. (See also the particle **ann** (Lessons 16, 35).

602. **ann an** "in" before a definite noun, which in turn is qualified by another noun in the genitive, may give the student some trouble. It has always been a stumbling block to learners. The duplication is common in all writing, but good Gaelic writers are coming to avoid it more and more.

Ann an combairle nan aingidh,	<i>in the counsel of the wicked.</i>
Ann an slighe nam peacach,	<i>in the way of sinners.</i>
Ann an lagh an Tighearna,	<i>in the law of the Lord.</i>
Ann an tigh-a-mhinisteir,	<i>in the minister's manse.</i>
An ait a mhic,	<i>in the place of his son.</i>

ann an in these sentences is this duplicated or emphatic preposition **ann** "in" and must not be mistaken or confused with the article and preposition **anns an, anns a'**, "in the." A definite noun qualified by a definite noun never takes the article (par. 212, 289, 290). Don't be misled by the English idiom.

603. **anns an** "in the" is often contracted into **'s an**.

'S an tir (<i>for anns an tir</i>),	<i>in the land.</i>
'S na h-aitibh sin,	<i>in these places.</i>

IDIOMATIC USES OF THE PREPOSITION "OF."

604. The preposition "of" is one which has many applications and meanings, both in English and Gaelic. We will endeavour to classify the more common uses as follows:—

- (a) Source, origin, cause, possession.
- (b) Class, rank, or a partitive reference.
- (c) "Of" has the meaning of "among," "on," "from," "taking from," etc.
- (d) "Of" expressing a property, quality, or attribute.
- (e) A verbal form "the better of it," etc.

(a) "Of" coming between two English nouns is not translated into Gaelic. We employ the genitive case as that case in Gaelic, as in certain other languages, gives the idea of source, origin, cause, possession, etc. (par. 212, 289).

(b) "Of" may mean class, rank, or have a partitive reference, when it is rendered by **de** (same as the French **de**); whenever it follows numerals; adjectives of the

comparative and superlative degree; partitives; nouns denoting fullness, abundance or scarcity. The noun following **de** being in the dative (pars. 302, 342).

Airde de 'n teaghlach, *the tallest of the family.*
Cuid de na fir, *some of the men.*

Before a noun or adjective beginning with a vowel or an **f** followed by a vowel **de** is written **dh'**; thus:—**dh' fhear** "of a man"; **dh' aon inntinn** "of one mind." In current practice the favourite mode of showing aspiration where **de** is used before **f** or a vowel, appears to be **a dh'**, which is a duplication of the preposition, thus:—**a dh' fhear**; **a dh' àon inntinn**.

Armailt mhor de dhaoibh agus a dh' eachaibh,
A great army of men and of horses (Luke xi. 39).

Again observe, we say, **pìos iarunn**, where **iarunn** is in the genitive; **pìos de iarunn** or **pìos de dh' iarunn**—**iarunn** being the dative after the preposition **de**.

(c) "Of" may have the sense of the genitive plural of the personal pronouns when it follows words denoting a part. It may mean "some of us," "how many of us," "among," "on," "from," as:—**gach fear againn** "each man of us"; **cia agaibh** "which of you"; **cia aca** "which of them" (not **dinn** "of us"; **dibh** "of you" etc). **Cia aca is fearr leat?** "Which of them do you like best?" = "which do you prefer?" But this is peculiar to the plural of these prepositional pronouns only, compare, "he spoke of him," *i.e.* "on him" as "on a subject," **labhair e air**; "he spoke of us" **labhair e oirnn**.

"Of = from" **Fear o Ghlaschu**, "a man from Glasgow" = "a man of Glasgow" = "a Glasgow man." **Rinn se e uaithe fein** "he did it of himself" (*lit.* "from" = "it proceeded from him as the originator.")

"Of, off" in the sense of "taking from"; "of" possession; motion "out of."

Thug e 'n diollaid de'n each,	<i>he took the saddle off the horse.</i>
Tha gu leor agam dheth,	<i>I have enough of it.</i>
Gearr sliseag de'n mhulachaig,	<i>cut a slice from the cheese.</i>
Mac do dh' Alasdair,	<i>a son to (of) Alexander.</i>
Thainig an t-eun as an ubh,	<i>the chicken has come out of the egg.</i>
As an uisge,	<i>out of the water.</i>

(d) When "of" expresses property, quality, or attribute, "of" has no equivalent in Gaelic. In the absence of any preposition the noun remains in the nominative case (par. 304).

Fear is mor neart,
Fear is mo ciall,

a man of great strength.
a man of the greatest sense.

(e) An idiomatic application of "of" in phrases like **is truimide am poca** "the bag is the heavier of it." **Truimide** being a verbal form compounded of **truime** "heavy" and **deth** "of it" (par. 364).

"Perhaps," "probably," "likely" are translated by **moide** (compounded of **mo** "greater" from **mor** "great" and **de** "of it"; i.e. "greater probability of it") (par. 364).

Cha moide gu 'n thainig e, *very likely he has not come.*
Cha moide gu 'm bheil thu slan, *perhaps you are not quite well.*

605. THE PREPOSITION **air**.

We have already given phrases where **air** is used idiomatically.

1st—**air** is used to express any quality of mind or body; **tha acras orm** "I am hungry" (Lesson XV.); rest:—**air a' bhord** "on the table."

2nd—**air** means "in." The words denoting measure and weight are followed by **air**:—

Mile air fad, *a mile in length.*
Slat air airde, *a yard in height.*
Punnd air chudthrom, *a pound in weight.*

3rd—Buying and selling. **Air** stands for "for," in this sense it is placed before the noun of price or the thing priced. "What is the price for that coat?" is translated into Gaelic **ciod tha air a' chota sin?** or **cia an luach tha an cota sin?** as if the price were marked on the article. To buy a thing for or at a certain price is to buy it on that price, as:—**fhuair e an leabhar sin air tasdain** "he got that book for (on) a shilling" (see note page 98).

606. THE PREPOSITION **do** "TO."

Do is used as a preposition with the infinitives of verbs. It has been changed in its form probably as the effect of

aspiration to **a** in connection with infinitives beginning with a consonant; thus instead of being written **do bhi** "to be" it is now the common practice to write **a bhi**, and so with the other consonant infinitives. With infinitives beginning with a vowel or **f** followed by a vowel the form of the preposition is **a dh'**; thus, **a dh' ol** "to drink"; **a dh' itheadh** "to eat"; **a dh' fhagail** "to leave"; but, **a fhreagairt** "to answer," where **f** is followed by a consonant (par. 538).

607. THE PREPOSITION **ri** "TO."

Ri signifying "to," "towards" has when placed instead of **ag** before the verbal noun, the effect of changing its signification into that of a future tense of the passive voice, thus:—**ri fhaicinn** "to be seen." **Ri** has also the effect of "at," "against," "during," "in," etc.

Tha e ri brogan, *he is (at) making shoes.*

608. THE PREPOSITION **gu** "TO."

Gu signifies that the motion terminates at the object, as:—**gu tigh an duine** "to the man's house" (and no further); **gus an dorus** "to the door" (and no further); **gu Glaschu**, "to Glasgow"; **gu tuath**, "to north." Before the verbal noun **gu** intimates the beginning of motion, as:—**tha iad gu falbh** "they were about going," "on the point of going." The same particle is used as an adverbial prefix to convert adjectives into adverbs and then corresponds to the English suffix "ly":—**gu mor** "very great," "greatly"; **gu h-olc** "badly." "For," "during," **gu brath**, **gu siorruidh** "for ever" (pars. 452, 577).

609. THE PREPOSITION **gun** "WITHOUT."

Gun signifies "without"; before a noun it corresponds to the English affix "less"; is equivalent to the negative "not."

Gun eolas, *without knowledge.* Gun airgid, *without money.*

Gun chiall, *senseless.* Gun churam, *careless.*

Dh'aithn e dhomh gun sin a dheanamh,
he ordered me not to do that.

610. THE PREPOSITIONS **aig**, and **le**.

For idioms with the preposition **aig**, "at" see Lesson XII. For the preposition **le** "with," "in possession," etc. see Lesson XX.

611. Read in Gaelic and translate into English :—

1. Ciod a' phris a tha air an iasg ? 2. Fhuair Iain an da iasg air tasdan. 3. Ciod thainig eadar ruibh, a Sheumais ? 4. Bha mise agus an ciobair air a' mhonadh ach bha an abhainn eadrainn. 5. C'ait' an robh thu anns a' mhaduinn ? 6. Bha mi ag iasgach. 7. Co bha leat ? 8. Bha Calum, mac an t-saoir leam. 9. Bu choir dhuibh a bhi anns an achadh. 10. Bu choir, ach gheall mi breac no dha do mhathair Chaluim. 11. Thug am balach beag an cat dubh bho 'n bhord. 12. Fhuair mi an sgian eadar a' chraobh agus an tigh. 13. Chaidh sinn troimh 'n bhaile mu fheasgar agus rainig sinn ar dachaidh roimh mhaduinn. 14. Bhuail an duine sin mi le cloich air a' ghruaidh. 15. Bithidh mi aig an dorus le maide aig coig uairean. 16. Chaidh an duine seachad air an dorus an trath so. 17. Thilg mi a' chlach thar na sraide. 18. Chaidh an luch troimh 'n toll nuair a bha an cat 'na deidh. 19. Tha an duine sin gun churam.

612. Translate into Gaelic :—

1. Where were you this morning ? 2. I was fishing. 3. Who was with you ? 4. John, the fisherman's son, was with me. 5. Was that man not with them ? 6. The house is between the river and the sea. 7. The boys go home during the summer. 8. We like fishing on the river in the evening. 9. I went round the house about five o'clock. 10. I found a man at the window. 11. Which of them do you prefer to come with you this time ? 12. I must go to the town now. 13. You ought not to go alone. 14. I will come with you to-day. 15. I am going to the town alone. 16. You can go now and you can be there before me. 17. I was before you at the bridge to-day but he was there before me. 18. You were before me at the town last night. 19. This wall is high, but I am going over it (*m*). 20. The rain is heavy but it is going past us. 21. That man is going over the river in a boat. 22. Do not stand between me and the fire. 23. It is cold and the wind is going through me. 24. John was between us this morning, but James is between you and me now. 25. This is too big for me now. 26. The wind will go through it. 27. He was without money or sense. 28. You speak of him as being senseless. 29. He is a man of the greatest sense. 30. He must be an educated man. 31. He has come in place of his father. 32. I fell into a hole and almost broke my leg. 33. We have come through a land without trees.

LESSON LII.

613.

THE COMPOUND PREPOSITION.

a chum to, unto.	am measg (<i>üm mesk</i>) among.
thun for the purpose.	an aghaidh (<i>ün öghy</i>) against.
a dhith (<i>yee</i>) without.	an aite (<i>ün äh tchü</i>) in place of.
a dheasbhuiddh (<i>yesvi</i>) for want of.	an coinneamh (<i>konnyüv</i>) to meet.
a los , for the purpose of.	an deidh (<i>ün tchäy</i>) after, behind.
a reir (<i>ü rār</i>) according to.	as eugmhais (<i>äkväs</i>) for want of.
a thaobh (<i>ü hōv</i>) as to, regarding.	comhla ri (<i>kolla ree</i>) } along
air feadh (<i>är fyögh</i>) among.	cuide ri (<i>koo tchü ree</i>) } with.
air ghaol (<i>ghöll</i>) } for the sake	dhionnsaidh (<i>yoonsy</i>) to, unto, towards.
air sgath (<i>skäh</i>) } of.	fa chomhair (<i>cho-ür</i>) opposite.
air muin , on the back of, top of.	mu choinneamh , opposite.
air son (<i>är-son</i>) for, because.	mu 'n cuairt , round about.
air culaobh (<i>koolüv</i>) behind (at the back of).	mu thimchioll (<i>himichüil</i>),
air beulaobh (<i>bälüv</i>) in front, before.	mu dheighinn (<i>yä ynn</i>), concerning, about.
an cois (<i>kosh</i>) } near to,	os ceann (<i>os kyaunn</i>) } above.
am fagus (<i>faküs</i>) } beside.	os cionn (<i>os kyoonn</i>) } overhead.
an laithair (<i>llä ür</i>) in presence of, before.	

614. Compound prepositions are mostly formed of a noun and simple preposition and are generally followed by the genitive case of the qualifying noun. That it should do so is according to rule, as will be seen when the sentence is transposed into Gaelic idiom (par. 290). "For the girl" we transpose to "for the sake of the girl" **air son na caileige**. Whose sake? The girl's sake. **Caileige** here is the genitive of **caileag**, qualifying the noun **son**.

Further examples:—

An lathair an t-sluaigh, *before the people—in presence of the people.*
An aghaidh naduir, *against nature—in the face of nature.*

615. The pronouns governed by these prepositions:—

(1) are placed between the simple preposition and the noun and

(2) are rendered in the genitive case.

Ann ar measg,	<i>in the midst of us</i> (lit. : <i>in our midst</i>).
Os bhur cionn,	<i>above you</i> („ <i>over your head</i>).
Air do chulaobh,	<i>behind you</i> („ <i>at your back</i>).
Air mo shon,	<i>for me</i> („ <i>for my sake</i>).

616. That these prepositions should in this way govern the pronouns is quite natural, as is plain from their meaning.

In English the words "in our midst" is the same as "in the midst of us"; the possessive pronoun "our" holds the same place as the genitive personal pronoun "of us"; its corresponding term in Gaelic is **ar**, "of us" = "our"; it is compounded with the preposition **ann** thus:—'**nar measg** "in our midst" (pars. 422-4).

617. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Tha an cu donn air do chulaobh. 2. Chunnaic mi an duine air beulaobh an tighe. 3. Bha e 'na sheasamh ri h-aghaidh. 4. An uair a bha sinn 'nar seasamh aig an doras thilg am balach beag clachan 'nar measg. 5. Cheannaich an duine na leabhraichean 'nam lathair. 6. Bha mise air feadh na coille anns a' mhaduinn agus fhuair mi uan beag aig ceann an rathaid. 7. Chaidh mi mu 'n cuairt air a' gharradh agus fhuair mi clachan mora ann an aite nan craobhan. 8. Chaidh e a steach do 'n tigh. 9. Chuir e a lamh air mo cheann agus shuidh mise air a bheulaobh. 10. Thainig mi a dh'ionnsaidh na h-aibhne agus chunnaic mi caora comhla ris an uan. 11. Dh'fhag mi an cu comhla ris na h-eich. 12. Am bheil an cu dubh comhla riutha? 13. Cha'n eil. 14. Chaidh sinn mu 'n cuairt air a' phairc. 15. Chaidh mo dheadh chu air thoiseach orm is rinn e oirre.

618. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. I saw a man in front of the house. 2. My faithful dog ran in front of me towards him. 3. We were standing at the door and a big boy threw stones amongst us. 4. There is a black cat behind you. 5. Strike it with a stick for me. 6. We will go round about the house now. 7. Have you heard concerning that man yet? 8. I have come for the purpose of speaking about that. 9. Will you come along with me into the house? 10. What is that above us? 11. The wind is against us; will we take shelter behind this wall? 12. That house opposite is mine. 13. I have it in place of one I lost by fire. 14. He came amongst us. 15. We went for the sake of the girl. 16. I put my hand on her head and she sat in front of me. 17. When we were sitting at the window a bad boy threw stones amongst us. 18. We sent the dog after him and he ran in front of a man. 19. The minister was standing there in the presence of the people. 20. We were at sea and we lost the oars during the night.

LESSON LIII.

THE ADVERB.

619. Adverbs are not so called because they are added to verbs, for they are joined to other words, including verbs, for the purpose of modifying references to time, place, manner, and quality.

620. Most adjectives can be converted into adverbs by placing **gu** before them. **Gu** expresses the same as the English suffix "ly" does; **gu** prefixes **h-** before vowels. Thus **math** "good" an adjective becomes adverbial when **gu** is placed before it, **gu math** "well"; **olc** "bad"; **gu h-olc** "badly, worse." **Gu** used thus before an adjective has of itself no definite meaning; an adjective used with **gu** to limit a verb suffers no change; no addition is made to it; an adjective used with **gu** is subject to limitation by another adjective.

Thuit clach gu luath,	<i>a stone fell quickly.</i>
Thuit clach gu math luath,	<i>a stone fell very quickly.</i>
Tha e gu math dheth,	<i>he is well off (off it.)</i>

621. The prefixed particles—**glé**, **fior**, **ro***—denote a higher degree of quality; they also aspirate their adjectives.

gle mhath, very well. **ro dhileas**, exceedingly faithful.

622. Compound adverbs or adverbial phrases are generally made up of the article and prepositions combined with nouns and adjectives. Some of these adverbial phrases, in certain circumstances, are regarded as prepositions.

623. ADVERBS OF TIME.

roimhe (<i>royü</i>) before.	am bliadhna , this year.
cian , ages ago, far distant.	an trath so } just now.
cheana (<i>chenü</i>) already.	an drasda }
a chlisgeadh , quickly.	an toiseach , first.
a chaoidh , for ever (future).	an uair (' <i>nuair</i>) (<i>nooir</i>) when.
a nis, nise , now.	cuin? c'uin? (<i>koon</i>) when?
a ris, rithist , again.	a la , by day, daily.
ainmig (<i>animik</i>) seldom.	a dh'oidhche (<i>ghoy chü</i>) by night.
am feadh , whilst.	a ghnath } always.
am feasd (<i>fäst</i>) for ever.	do ghnath }
am maireach , to-morrow.	fadheoidh (<i>fa y o y</i>) at last.
an ceart uair , presently.	fathast (<i>fah-üst</i>) yet.
an comhnuidh (<i>üng kony</i>),	gu brath , for ever.
habitually, continually.	gu minig } often, frequently.
an de , yesterday.	gu tric }
an diugh , to-day.	gu siorruidh , (<i>shyorry</i>) for ever.
an earar (ear-thrath), the day	idir (<i>y tchür</i>) at all.
after to-morrow.	mu dheireadh (<i>y ärügh</i>) at last.
an nochd , to-night.	re seal } for a time.
an raoir (<i>röyrr</i>) last night.	re tamuill }
an uraidh (<i>oor-y</i>) last year.	riamh (<i>ree-üv</i>) ever (past).

* **ro** is an old particle (identical with Latin **pro**) surviving in disguise as a particle however in only two verbal forms, **robh** and **rinn**, although it is in common use as a particle intensifying the signification of an adjective: thus **mor** "great"; **ro mhor**, "very great."

624.

ADVERBS OF PLACE.

an ear (<i>ün er</i>) east.	tuath (<i>tooü</i>) north.
an iar (<i>ün eer</i>) west.	deas (<i>tchäss</i>) south.
a bhos, bhos , on this side (rest).	a thaobh , aside.
a leth taobh , to one side.	a steach } within, inside,
a mach } out, without,	a stigh } into.
a muigh } outside.	far (before am, an, nach), where
a bhan , downwards (motion).	seachad , past.
an aird , upwards (motion).	sios (<i>shyüs</i>) downwards (motion)
a nall, nall , to this side.	suas (<i>sooüs</i>) upwards (motion).
a null, nunn , to the other side.	shios (<i>hhyüs</i>) below, down (rest).
a nuas , from above, down.	shuas (<i>hhooüs</i>) above (rest).
a nios , from below, up.	thall , on the other side (rest).
an sin , there.	an sud 's an so } here and there
an so , here.	thall's a bhos }
an sud , yonder.	c'aite? (<i>kätchü</i>) where? (inter.)

625.

ADVERBS OF MANNER, ETC.

anabarrach , exceedingly.	gu dearbh , } truly.
air eiginn , scarcely.	gu cinnteach , } certainly.
air leth , apart, separately.	gu leir , altogether.
air seacharan , astray.	gu leoir , enough, plenty.
a mhain , only.	le cheile , together.
amhuil , like as.	mar an ceudna , likewise.
am bitheantas , usually.	maraon (araon) , together.
comhla , together.	mar sin , as that.
da rireadh , really.	mar so , as this.
fa leth , individually.	mar sud , as yon.
gle, ro, fíor , very truly.	mu seach , alternately.
gu buileach , thoroughly.	theagamh , perhaps.
	uidh air n-uidh , gradually.

626. A number of adverbs denote a state of rest, motion to, and from. Note carefully the rendering of some of these, and principally the rendering of the English words "up" and "down."

A suas and **a sios** are used when there is motion "up" or "down" from where we stand; **shuas** and **shios** are used for "rest" at some distance "above" or "below" us; **a nuas** and **a nios** are used when there is motion "towards" us from "above" or "below." **A bhos** is used when there is a question of "rest" near us; and **thall** when there is "rest" some distance away. Verbs of "rest" are used with adverbs of "rest"; and verbs of "motion" with adverbs of "motion."

"A chaidh sios (*went down*) gu h-ifrinn; a dh' eirich an treas la o mharbhaibh, a chaidh suas (*went up*) air neamh"—A' Chreud.

"He descended into Hell; the third day He rose again from the dead; and ascended into Heaven"—The Creed.

Tha e shuas ann an neamh, He is up in heaven.

627. **Deas** and **tuath** also mean "right" and "left" hand. As regards the points of the compass, the observer, like the ancient Druids and sun-worshippers of old, is supposed to face the rising sun. Thus "the east" is called **an ear**, meaning "before," "in front of," the land or country immediately in front of the observer; the country to the "right hand" is thus the "south," hence **an deas**; for the same reason the "north" was called **an tuath**, the country to the "left hand"; and the "west" **an iar**, the country at the "back," "after," "behind," i.e., the "hinterland," because in this way it was to them the land to which the "back" was turned. From these we have:—

o'n deas,	from the south.	taobh an iar,	the western side.
gaoth o'n deas,	the south wind.	tuath-air,	northerly exposure.
o'n tuath,	from the north.	Uibhist-a-Tuath,	North Uist.
gaoth o'n tuath	the north wind.	deas-ail,	southward.

628.

*Vocabulary.***sloc** nm. or nf., a pit, a hole.**Gaidhlig** (*gálik*) nf. Gaelic (language).

629. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Bha na coin a' ruith thall 's a bhos. 2. Chaidh iad a mach le cheile. 3. Am bheil an duine aig obair? 4. Tha e shìos anns an t-sloc. 5. Chaidh e a sìos an raoir. 6. Thig e a nìos am maireach. 7. Chaidh an ciobair a suas an de. 8. Chaidh na gillean thar a' cheile. 9. Cha robh mise riamh ann am bàta. 10. Bha mise ann am bàta an de agus bithidh mi ann am bàta eile am maireach. 11. C'aite am bheil am bàta? 12. Tha i shìos aig a' chladach. 13. Co tha shuas aig an tigh? 14. Is e an duine sin. 15. Tha e gle mhath gu dearbh. 16. Chuala mise gu'n robh Iain tinn. 17. Cuin a thainig e? 18. Am bheil e a stigh? 19. Cha'n eil, chaidh e a mach air eiginn. 20. Co tha comhla ris? 21. Is e Seumas a tha ann. 22. Tha Gaidhlig gu leoir aige. 23. Suas leis a' Ghaidhlig. 24. Thainig e nall chun an doruis an drasda. 25. Tha e a nìs a bhos aig ceann an tìghe. 26. Bha mi deas is tuath, s-iar is s-ear, ach tha mi a nìs ann an Albainn. 27. Cha'n fhag i gu brath e gus an traigh an cuan s-iar.

630. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. The shepherd went up the hill in the morning but he came down in the afternoon. 2. He went out of town. 3. Was he ever from home before? 4. He was from home last year. 5. When will he come home? 6. Where is your son? 7. He is in the house at the side of the river. 8. Will he cross the river? 9. He will not cross to the other side to-day. 10. The river rose gradually. 11. His dog is running here and there. 12. He has been in my house but he will never (say "not ever") be in it again. 13. Have you any Gaelic?

14. I have plenty Gaelic. 15. We always speak Gaelic in this place. 16. Where is your other son to-night? 17. They went out together. 18. I came up from Glasgow this morning and I go down again the day after to-morrow. 19. According to John I should go oftener. 20. It is better to go oftener certainly. 21. I cannot go at present. 22. I saw him on the other side of the river among the trees. 23. He comes often but seldom stays long. 24. When will he be back again? 25. Let us say individually "Up with the Gaelic." 26. I am going over the ocean to the great west land and it is not likely I will come eastwards again. 27. I may go to the south next year.

LESSON LIV.

631. CONJUNCTIONS.

Simple Conjunctions.

ach,	but.	na,	than.
agus, 's, is,	and.	ma,	if.
bho'n, o'n,	since.	mu'n,	before, lest.
a chionn,	because.	mur,	if not.
coma,	however.	mar,	like, as.
eadhon,	even.	no,	or.
ged,	though.	oir,	for, because.
gidheadh,	yet, nevertheless.	co cho,	as, so.
gu,	that.	ri,	as.

632. NOTE.—The word "only" is usually put in Gaelic by using the negative verb and the conjunction **ach**, "but"; e.g., **cha robh aige ach da each** (He had not but two horses). He had only two horses.

633. The conjunction couples like cases of nouns, tenses of verbs, etc.

Thuit agus bhrist clach,	<i>a stone fell and broke.</i>
Fion agus bainne,	<i>wine and milk.</i>
Cha mheal e sith no solas,	<i>he shall not enjoy peace nor comfort.</i>
Thig no cha tig e,	<i>he shall come or shall not.</i>
Bagair ach na buail,	<i>threaten but don't strike.</i>

634. Some conjunctions are used in pairs and are said to be co-relative.

Cho or **co** expressing a comparison requires **ri** or **ris**.

Tha e cho geal ris an t-sneachd,	<i>it is as white as snow.</i>
Tha Iain cho ard ri Seumas,	<i>John is as tall as James.</i>
Tha ise cho glie riut-sa,	<i>she is as wise as you.</i>

635. When **cho** signifies "so"; when a certain condition is pointed out; when it is followed by a verb; **agus** is the co-relative of **cho**.

Tha e cho math agus is feumail dha,	<i>he is as good as is necessary.</i>
Bi cho math agus an dorus fhosgladh.	<i>be so good as to open the door.</i>
Cha robh mi cho bronach agus dall,	<i>I was not so mournful and blind.</i>
Bha e cho trom agus nach do thog mi e.	<i>it was so heavy that I did not lift it.</i>
Tha e cho laidir agus a bhitheas e,	<i>he is as strong as he will be.</i>
Bha e cho cinnteach agus gu'n do chuir e geall,	<i>he was so certain that he laid (put) a wager.</i>

636. **Cho** signifies "as" when followed by **ri**, **le**, etc.

Tha e cho caoin ri uan,	<i>he is as mild as a lamb (as=that he can be compared with a lamb).</i>
-------------------------	--

637.

INTERJECTIONS.

ma seadh!	verily!	seadh!	ay!
ob ob!	alas!	gu deimhinn!	verily!
ochon a righ!	alas!	mo thruaighe!	alas!
mata!	well!	da rireadh!	verily!
mo chreach!	alas!	och, och!	dear, dear!

An interjection requires the vocative case of nouns (aspirated).

638. Read in Gaelic and translate into English:—

1. Tha tigh agus garradh agam. 2. Is e fear no bean. 3. Cha tusa ach Seumas. 4. Mairi agus a brathair. 5. Cho mor ri creig. 6. Bi cho math agus an tigh a leigeil fhaicinn domh. 7. Mheal mi sith agus solas. 8. Is gile a' ghrian na ghealach. 9. Bha e cho cinnteach sin cuin a thainig e dhachaidh, A Sheumais. 10. Tha mi cho laidir agus a bhitheas mi. 11. Is e sin a' chuis a reir barail Iain. 12. Mata, mata. 13. Slan leibh.

639. Translate into Gaelic:—

1. Is it man or woman? 2. My house and garden. 3. Mary and her sister are here. 4. Her sister is as tall as ever she will be. 5. She was so certain that she was coming here. 6. I will have no peace nor comfort now. 7. Be so good as to shut the door and open the window. 8. John is as wise as Mary. 9. Is that according to John. 10. I shall go or shall not according to time. 11. Nevertheless it is your duty to go. 12. Good-night. 13. Good-bye.

THE GAELIC LANGUAGE.

640. As an organ of intellectual expression and as a means of producing an aesthetical effect, what sort of language have we got? As an organ of intellectual expression, the Gaelic, in common with Greek, German, Sanskrit, and all self-evolved languages, has the advantage of being able on all occasions to fling out new branches from the native stem and to grow to exuberant enlargement as occasion may require. What a patch-work has been our old Saxon, by the bitter frost that nipped its early budding, and the constant habit of borrowing thence resulting, the learned among us, as well as the unlearned though in very different ways, are constantly made to feel. The English language, as we have it now, is not so much a coherent growth as a disturbed organism. Our words accordingly are not coins with an intelligible sign and superscription, but mere counters. How different is Gaelic, where every word tells the story of its own composition to the unlettered peasant as vividly as to the most learned etymologist. A whale, for instance, is **muc-mhara**, literally "a sow of the sea;" "an adopted son" is **uchd-mhac**, literally "a son of the bosom," as contrasted with the womb; a swallow is **gobhlan-gaoithe**, i.e. "a bird that oars the breeze with its forky tail"; while the word **cruthachadh**, "to create" used in the first verse of the first chapter of Genesis, to a Highland laddie under a competent teacher will at once suggest the fundamental notion of the Platonic philosophy is that **cruth** or "form" is the necessary and legitimate product of the action of Divine reason upon matter. Now every one knows that the English language, without a long process of root-digging in Greek and Roman soil, cannot be made to yield such significant results; and therefore the Gaelic language for the education of the Highland peasantry has an advantage which English to the English peasant has not, and can never be made to have. But from this great advantage the poor Highlander has got little benefit, partly from the neglect of his language by schoolmasters and people of the middle and upper classes; partly from the fact that beyond the sphere of the Scriptures and popular theology the language has received very scanty culture, and so instead of developing its own native powers

it has fallen into a general habit of pilfering from the English.

The consequence is that though the Gaelic dictionary contains Celtic equivalents for such modern scientific terms as "chemistry," **feallsanachd-brighe**, yet as they have obtained no currency among the people, who in ninety-nine cases out of a hundred cannot spell the tongue which they speak, they are not to be regarded as forming part of the language; and even in talking of objects which move in the familiar sphere of common life, for every Highlander that asks for his **biadh-maidne** nine hundred and ninety-nine would ask for his "breakfast."—*Prof. J. S. Blackie.*

HOW TO LEARN TO READ GAELIC.

It was when well up in years that Professor John Stuart Blackie, in his rambling flights through the Highlands, began to take an interest in Gaelic. He says, "I began to gather a small collection of Gaelic words from the mere names of the places through which I travelled, aided by accidental incidents. The very name of the broad sloping ben, which I saw every morning, had its meaning and suggested cognate words to me. I am setting down these small personal experiences of mine, principally because I have found a notion generally prevalent that it is an extremely difficult language to learn and not to be overcome by any ordinary resolution. For the sake of those who may be disposed to follow in my track through these unfrequented ways I will jot down here the remaining steps of my procedure in the acquaintance of that venerable old tongue. I took the Gaelic Bible which, from my previous acquaintance with the English, I soon learnt to read. A Gaelic Grammar helped me over the difficulties of flexion. Southey, I remember, somewhere in his diary says, 'that it was his fashion always to commence the study of a new language with a version of the New Testament,' and there can be no doubt that to those who know their Bibles there can be no better method proposed. The language of both Gaelic and English versions is classic, and about the best to be had. Let the student read the Gaelic Bible daily, along with the English, and translate the one back into the other alternatively, and this will be a hundred times more

efficient than any other method, and will work the language into his head.

“ Various entertaining scraps of biography, history, and fictitious narrative furnished me, by degrees, with a large vocabulary, but gave no help in the ready use of those colloquial terms which are most necessary for intercourse with the people. To remedy this, my studies turned to the ‘ West Highland Tales ’ and the dialogues in ‘ Caraid nan Gaidheal. ’ After this I kept steadily reading for an hour or two a day, till by frequent repetition the dictionary became superfluous. This, of course, is merely a matter of resolution and determination.”

There have been published recently several volumes of Gaelic Tales, accompanied by English translations, legends and translations being printed on opposite pages, page for page. This has been done to help students of the language and enable them to arrive at the meaning of every sentence with ease and at once. The Gaelic and the English translations are so arranged into short paragraphs that there will be no difficulty in following the grammar. These are well calculated to help and encourage the student and sure to make him take pleasure in Gaelic.

A NEW GAELIC NUMERATION.

We have in Gaelic Self Taught kept to the present standards of the language. There is no doubt that a few improvements on standard Gaelic could be made—there is no living language perfect (and least of all is English). The following suggested improvement in the method of Gaelic numeration is put forward for consideration by the Gaelic Academy and Gaelic writers generally for gradual adoption.*

The “ vigintal ” system of numeration, as we may term the present Gaelic system, is a departure from the old decimal system of counting which still survives in the language of our cousins in Ireland. Our signs, both Roman and Arabic, are based on “ tens,” but in order to write or say mixed figures in words, we have at present to subject our minds to an acrobatic feat, *e.g.* take the figure “ seventy-nine,” this, after our mental struggle, becomes

* See an article by E. M. D. in “ Alba,” No. 10, new series.

“three-twenties-and-nineteen” **tri fichead ’s naoi deug**. Arithmetic can never be successfully taught in Gaelic unless we change from this method.

The decimal system only requires a beginning. After **naoi air fhichead** “twenty-nine” will come **trichead** “thirty”; then **trichead ’s a h-aon** “thirty-one”; etc; **ceithreachad** “forty”; **caogad** “fifty”; **siathad** “sixty”; **seachdad** “seventy”; **ochdad** “eighty”; **naochad** “ninety”; and so on with the higher numerals. Compare the effect of using such decimals in the following example:

“If Cain shall be avenged sevenfold, truly Lamech seventy and sevenfold.” Gen. iv. 24.

“Ma dhiolar Cain a sheachd uiread, gu deimhin diolar Lamech a sheachd deug agus a thri fichead uiread.”

This is the Gaelic of our familiar version, observe that we lose the pungency and the play on the figure words “seven” and “seventy-and-seven,” the effect of which is to be considered. In using these decimal tens, we preserve and realise to some extent this play on the words “seventy-and-seven” in **seachdad ’s a seachd**. Compare also the same as it is to be found in Bedel’s Irish Bible.

Used in columns for addition, subtraction, etc., thus:—

35	thirty-five	trichead ’s a coig
21	twenty-one	fichead ’s a h-aon
43	forty-three	ceithreachad ’s a tri
99	ninety-nine	naochad ’s a naoi

SYNOPSIS OF ASPIRATION.

The following examples give the position and circumstances in which the initial letters are aspirated, if aspirable, for the exceptions see pars. 21 and 38. Some of the causes of aspiration can only be learned as they arise.

Nouns are aspirated after the possessive pronouns:—**mo** my; **do** thy; **a** his:—**mo bhrog, do chu, a cheann**.

Nouns commencing with a vowel are aspirated by the feminine possessive pronoun **a** her:—**a h-athair** her father.

Nouns are aspirated after the prepositions:—**do** to; **mar** like; **de** of; etc. (see pars, 595-6-7):—**do bhaile, mar chloich, bho dhuine, mu thom**.

The initial consonant of a noun is aspirated when preceded by certain adjectives, and when the first noun of a compound term qualifies the second noun:—**droch dhuine, cis-mhaor, cas-cheum**.

The vocative of nouns in both genders, singular and plural, is aspirated:—**A ghille! A ghillean!**

Names of places, titles, and proper names of men are aspirated:—**Cuil-thodair, Muilt Bharasdail, Failte Shir Seumas, cas Dhomhnuill.**

Nouns are aspirated after the numerals **aon, da, a' cheud**:—**aon thear, da ghille, a' cheud mhac.**

The definite article **an** "the" becomes **a'** and causes aspiration; after a preposition ending in a vowel becomes **'n** and causes aspiration, of all aspirable nouns in genitive and dative singular masculine, and nominative and dative singular feminine:—**aig a' ghille, do'n bhaile, a' chlach, aig a' chloich.**

The definite article **na** aspirates nouns commencing with a vowel in the genitive singular feminine, and the nominative and dative plurals of both genders:—**na h-aibhne, na h-aithrichean.**

An adjective immediately following and qualifying a genitive singular masculine noun is aspirated. An adjective following a definite dative masculine noun is aspirated. An adjective following a nominative or dative singular feminine noun is aspirated:—**an eich dhuinn, aig an each dhonn, bean mhor, leis a' chaileig bhig.**

An adjective qualifying a nominative plural noun which is formed like the genitive singular is aspirated (par. 336):—**na h-eich dhonna.**

Compound nouns have the first consonant of the second word of the compound aspirated whether noun or adjective in agreement as an adjective with the gender of the first element. If the second element is a noun in the genitive plural it is aspirated in all cases—***balla-chlach, coileach-dubh, ceann a' choilic'h-dhuibh.**

Adjectives are aspirated after the intensive prefixes **fior, ro, gle, sar** (par. 621):—**gle ghlan**, very clean. **Gu** before vowels (par. 620):—**gu h-olc** very badly.

Compound adjectives have the second element always aspirated:—**fairge thonn-gheal** (f), **cuan tonn-gheal** (m).

The verb is aspirated by the particles **ma, cha** (except **d** and **t**, par. 494); by the relative **a** (par. 440); the conjunction **ged** (page 123); the infinitive after **do** or **a** (par. 538). The past dependent and subjunctive are aspirated (Lessons xli., xlii.)

The verb **bu** aspirates words immediately following except initial **d** or **t** (par. 156):—**bu cheart dhuit.**

Some words are always aspirated when naturally they should not be: **their** will say, **thoir** give, **thig** come, **gheibh** will get, **bho** from, **bhur** your, etc.

Some words are found aspirated and unaspirated without regard to rule, **fein fein** self, **ta tha** is, **domh dhomh** to me, **diom dhìom** of me, etc.

* The Gaelic in this instance is more logical than English, **balla-chlach** is literally "a wall of stones." This qualifying noun is in the genitive plural for after all "a stone wall" is "a wall made of stones" and Gaelic construes accordingly, "of stones" being translated in the genitive plural, not genitive singular—**chloiche.**

GAELIC-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

The usual grammatical abbreviations are used.

The words in parenthesis are, in the case of nouns, peculiar forms of the genitive; of verbs, forms of the verbal noun; of adjectives, forms of the comparative. The numbers refer to pars. in Gaelic Self Taught.

- A**, *rel. pron.*, who, which, that.
A, *poss. pron.*, his, her, its.
A', *art.*, the.
Abair, *irr. v.*, say (ag radh).
Abhag, *nm.*, a terrier.
Abhainn (*aibhne*), *nf.*, a river.
Ach, *conj.*, but.
Achadh, *nm.*, a field.
Acras, *nm.*, hunger.
Ad (*aide*), *nf.*, a hat.
Adharc, *nf.*, a horn.
Agam agad, etc. (see par. 114).
Aghaidh, **an aghaidh**, *prep.*, in the face of, against.
Agus, *conj.*, and.
Aig, **ag**, *prep.*, at.
Aige, **aice**, etc. (see par. 114).
Air, *prep.*, on (*pp.* on him, etc.) par. 138.
Air ball, *adv.*, immediately.
Airgid (*airgid*), *nm.*, money.
Air-son, *prep.*, for, because.
Aithne, *nf.*, knowledge, acquaintance.
Aite, *nm.*, a place.
Aite (**an aite**), *prep.*, in place of.
Alba (**Alba** and **Albainn**), *nf.*, Scotland.
Allt (*uillt*), *nm.*, a brook.
An, **am**, *art.*, the.
An, **am**, *poss. pron.*, their.
An, **am**, *interr. particle*.
An, **am**, *relative pron.*, whom.
Anmoch, *adj.* and *adv.*, late.
An drasda, *adv.*, now.
Ann, **anns**, *prep.*, in, into.
Ann, *adv.*, there, here.
- Annam annad**, etc. (*p.p.* 404).
Aon, **h-aon**, *nu. adj.*, one.
Aodach, *nm.*, a cloth, clothes.
Aonar, *nu. n.*, one person, alone.
Ar, *poss. pron.*, our.
Aran, *nm.*, bread.
Arbhar, *nm.*, corn in sheaf or growing.
Ard (*airde*), *adj.*, high.
Arsa (*ars'*), *defect. v.*, said.
As, *prep.*, out of.
As (*rel. form of verb*, is). [etc.
Asam, **asad**, etc., out of us, you,
Athair (*athar*), *nm.*, a father.
- Ba**, *nf.*, cows; *pl.*, of bó.
Baile, *nm.*, a town, village.
Bainne, *nm.*, milk.
Balach, *nm.*, a boy.
Balla, *nm.*, a wall.
Ban (*baine*), *adj.*, white, fair.
Ban bhan, *gen. pl. of bean*.
Barail (*baraile* or *baralach*), *nf.*, an opinion.
Bard, *nm.*, a poet.
Barr (*barra*), *nm.*, a crop, top.
Bata, *nm.*, staff.
Bàta, *nm.*, a boat.
Beag (*bige* or *lugh*a), *adj.*, small, little.
Bean (*mnatha*), *nf.*, a woman.
Beanntan, *pl.*, of *beinn*.
Beartach (*beartaiche*), *adj.*, rich.
Beinn, *nf.*, a mountain, hill.
Beir, *irr. v.*, bear, bring forth (*breith* and *beirsinn*).
Beir (*air*), catch, seize.

- Beulaobh (air)**, *prep.*, in front of.
Bha, *v. past*, was, were.
Bheil, *depl. v.*, am, is, are.
Bheir, *v.*, will give.
Bhithias, bhios, *rel. v.*, will be.
Bho, o, *prep.*, from.
Bhos (a bhos), *adv.*, down, below.
Bhur, ur, *poss. pron.*, your.
Bhuam, bhuat (see par. 122).
Bi, *v.*, be.
Biadh (bidhe), *nm.*, food.
Bithinn, *subj. v.*, would be.
Bith, vn., *air bith*, being.
Binn (binne), *adj.*, sweet, melodious.
Blath, *adj.*, warm.
Bliadhna (bliadhna), *nf.*, a year ;
pl., bliadhnachan.
Bo (ba), *nf.*, a cow.
Bochd (bochda), *adj.*, poor.
Boidheach (boidhche), *adj.*, pretty beautiful.
Borb (buirbe), *adj.*, fierce.
Bord (buid), *nm.*, a table, board.
Bradan, *nm.*, a salmon.
Brath, gu brath, *adv.*, for ever.
Brathair (brathar), *nm.*, a brother.
Breab, v., kick.
Breac (bric), *nm.*, a trout.
Breac (brice), *adj.*, spotted, speckled.
Breug (breige), *nm.*, a lie.
Brist, v., break (*bristeadh*).
Briste, v. adj., broken.
Brog, nf., a shoe.
Bronach, adj., sad.
Bruach, nf., a bank, brink.
Buachail (buachaille), *nm.*, a shepherd.
Buth (butha), *nf.*, a shop, *pls.*,
buthan (buthannan, buithean).
Cabhag, nf., a hurry, haste.
Cach, indef. pron., the rest, the others.
Cach-a-cheile, one another.
Caidil, v., sleep (*cadal*).
Caileag (caileige), *nf.*, a little girl.
Caillte, v. adj., lost.
C'aite ? inter., where ?
Calum, nm., Malcolm.
Caol (caoile), *adj.*, thin, slender, small.
Caora (caorach), *nf.*, a sheep.
Caoraich, pl., of *caora*.
Caraid, nm., a friend.
(pl., cairdean).
C'arson ? inter. why? wherefore?
Cas (coise), *nf.*, a foot, a shaft, or haft.
Cat, nm., a cat.
Cathair (cathrach), *nf.*, a chair ;
pl., cathraichean.
Ceangail, v., tie, bind (*ceangal*).
Ceann (cinn), *nm.*, a head.
Ceannaich, v., buy, bought,
(ceannach).
Cearc (circe), *nf.*, a hen.
Cearr, adj., wrong.
Ceathramh, nu. adj., the fourth.
Ceithir, nu. adj., four.
Ceo (ceo and ceotha), *nm. or f.*, mist.
Ceol (ciuil), *nm.*, music.
Ceud (an ceud, a' cheud), *nu. adj.*, the first.
Ceud, nu. adj., a hundred.
Cha, neg. part., not.
Chaidh, v. went, *past tense of rach*.
Cheile (le cheile), *adv.*, together.
Chi, v., *fut. of v. faic*, see.
Cho, conj., as.
Chuala, v., did hear.
Chugam, chugad, etc. (*p.p.* 404).
Chuireas, v., *rel. fut. of v. cuir*, put
Chunnaic, v., did see.
Cia mar ? inter., how ?
Cia meud ? cia mhead ? inter.,
 how many.
Ciad, nu. adj., a hundred.
Ciall (ceille), *nf.*, sense, understanding.
Cinnteach (cinntiche), *adj.*, sure, certain.
Ciobair, nm., a shepherd.
Ciod ? inter., what ?
 (= *Gu de ? de ?*).
Clach (cloiche), *nf.*, a stone.
Cladach, nm., a shore.

- Clachair**, *nm.*, a mason.
Cliabh, *nm.*, a creel; also breast, chest.
Cluas, *nf.*, an ear.
Cluinn, *irr. v.*, hear (**cluinntinn**).
Cnoc (**cnuic**), *nm.*, a hill.
Co? *inter. pron.*, who?
Co leis? *inter. pron.*, whose?
Coig, *nu. adj.*, five.
Coigreach, *nm.*, a stranger.
Coignear, *nu. n.*, five persons.
Coille, *nf.*, a wood; *pl.* **coilltean**.
Coir (**corach**, **coire**), right, justice; *pls.*, **coraichean**, **coirean**.
Comhla (**comhla ris**), *prep.*, along with, together.
Con, **chon**, *gen. pl.*, of **cu**, a dog.
Craobh, *nf.*, a tree.
Creag (**creige**), *nf.*, a rock.
Crubach (**crubaiche**), *adj.*, lame.
Cu (**coin**), *nm.*, a dog.
Cuan, *nm.*, ocean.
Cuid, *indef. pron.*, some, certain (ones).
Cuid-eiginn, *indef. pron.*, some person or persons.
Cuide (**ri**, **ris**, etc.), *prep.*, along with.
C'uin? **cuin?** *inter. adv.*, when?
Cuir, *v.*, put, set, sow, (**cur**).
Cul (**cuil**), *nm.*, the back part of anything.
Culaobh, *nm.*, the back, the back parts.
Cupan, *nm.*, a cup.

Da, *nu. adj.*, two.
Da, **dha**, *pp.*, to him.
Dachaidh, *nf.*, a home.
Dall (**doille**), *adj.*, blind.
Damh, *nm.*, an ox, a stag.
Dan (**dain**), *nm.*, poem.
Daoine, *pl.*, of **duine**.
Dara, **darna**, *nu. adj.*, the second.
De, **an de**, *adv.*, yesterday.
De, *inter. pron.*, what?
De, *prep.*, of.
Dean, *irr. v.*, do, make (**deanamh**)
Dearbh (**gu dearbh**), *adv.*, indeed, certainly.
- Dearg** (**deirge**), *adj.*, red.
Deas, *nf.*, the south (for, **an airde** ' **deas**=the **s. airt**), the right hand.
Deich, *nu. adj.*, ten.
Deicheamh, *nu. adj.*, tenth.
Deidh (**an deidh**), *prep.* and *adv.*, after.
Deoch (**dibhe**), *nf.*, a drink; *pl.*, **deochan** or **deochannan**.
Deug, *nu. particle*, teen.
Dhachaidh (**dachaidh**), home-wards; *adv.*, is generally *aspirated*.
Dhiom, **dhiot**, etc. (*p.p.* **de**, 404).
Dhomh, **dhuir**, etc. (*p.p.* **do**, 404).
Diubh, *pp.*, of them.
Diugh (**an diugh**), *adv.*, to-day.
Do, *poss. pron.*, thy.
Do, *prep.*, to.
Dol, **a' dol**, *vn.*, going.
Donn (**duinne**), *adj.*, brown.
Dorus, *nm.*, a door.
Dorcha, *adj.*, dark.
Drasda (**an drasda**), *adv.*, just now.
Droch, *adj.*, bad—precedes the noun always.
Druid, *v.*, shut, close (**druideadh**).
Druidte, *v. adj.*, closed.
Dubh (**duibhe**), *adj.*, black.
Duibh, *gen. masc.*, of **dubh**.
Duibh, *pp.*, to you; *pl.*
Duneideann, Edinburgh.
Duin, *v.*, close, shut (**dunadh**).
Duine, *nm.*, a man.
Duit, *pp.*, to thee (see **dhomh**).
Dun, *nm.*, a hill, a heap.
Duthaich (**duthcha**), *nf.*, a country; *pl.* **duthchannan**.

E, *pron.*, he; him.
Each (**eich**), *nm.*, a horse.
Eadar, *prep.*, between.
Eadarainn (*p.p.* 404).
Eadh, **seadh**, that's it, it is.
Eagal, *nm.*, fear.
Eallach, *nm.*, a load, a burden.
Ear, the east (for, **an airde 'n ear**)
Earar, day after to-morrow.

Eiginn (or **eigin**), *indef. pron.*, some, see **cuid eiginn**.

Eile, *indef. pron.*, other, another.

Eilid (**eilid**, **eilde**), *nf.*, a hind.

Eirich, *v.*, rise (**eirigh**).

Eolach (**eolaiche**), *adj.*, acquainted, skilled.

Eun (**eoin**), *nm.*, a bird; *pl.*, **eoin**.

Facal, *nm.*, a word.

Fada, *adj.*, long.

Fag, *v.*, leave (**fagail**).

Fagus (**faisge**), *adj.*, near.

Faic, *irr. v.*, see, behold (**faicinn**).

Faigh, *irr. v.*, get (see *irr. verbs*).

Falbh, *v.*, go (**falbh**).

Fan, *v.*, wait (**fantainn**).

Fang (**fainge**), *nf.*, a sheep-pen.

Faod, *v.* depend, form of **faodaidh**

Faodaidh mi, etc., I, thou, etc., may.

Faotainn (see **faigh**).

Far, *adv.*, where.

Fas, *v.* grow.

Feadan, *nm.*, pipe, a chanter.

Feadh, **air feadh**, *prep.*, among, through.

Fearrd, *adv.*, better, best.

Fear (**fir**), *nm.*, a man.

Fear-ciuil, *nm.*, a musician.

Fearr (see **math**).

Feasgar, *nm.*, evening.

Fein, *emph. part.*, self.

Feum (**feuma**), *nm.* and *f.*, need, use.

Feumaidh mi, thu, etc., I, thou, etc., must.

Fiacail (**fiacra**), *nf.*, a tooth.

Fiadh (**feidh**), *nm.*, a deer.

Fiabhras, *nm.*, a fever.

Fichead, *nu. adj.*, twenty.

Fion, *nm.*, wine.

Fios, *nm.*, knowledge, information.

Fhathast, **fathast**, *adv.*, yet.

Fhuair, *v.*, *past tense* of **faigh**

Fliuch (**fliuiche** or **fliche**), *adj.*, wet.

Fo, *prep.*, under.

Fodham, **fodhad** (see *p. p.* 404).

Fosgail, *v.* open (**fosgladh**).

Fosgailte, *v. adj.*, opened.

Fraoch, *nm.*, heather.

Fras (**froise**), *nf.*, a shower.

Fuar (**fuair**), *adj.*, cold.

Gabh, *v.* take.

Gach, *indef. pron.*, each, every

Gaidhlig, *nf.*, Gaelic (language).

Gann, *adj.*, scarce.

Gaol, *nm.*, love.

Garradh, *nm.*, a garden, a wall.

Geal (**gile**), *adj.*, white.

Gealach, *nf.*, moon.

Gearr, *v.*, cut (**gearradh**).

Ged, *conj.*, though.

Geug (**geige**), *nf.*, a branch.

Geur (**geire**, **geoire**), *adj.*, sharp.

Gheibh, *irr. v.*, will get.

Gille, *nm.*, a lad, youth.

Gin, *indef. pron.*, any.

Glas, *v.*, lock (**glasadh**).

Glas (**glaise**), *adj.*, grey.

Glas (**glaise**), *nf.*, a lock.

Glascho, Glasgow.

Gle, *an intensive particle*, very.

Gloine, *nf.*, a glass, a pane.

Gorm (**guirme**), *adj.*, blue.

Gradh, *nm.*, love.

Grian (**greine**), *nf.*, sun.

Gu, gus, *prep.*, to.

Gu, *conj.* that; **gu'n**, that which

Gu, *prefixed to adjectives to form adverbs.*

Gual, *nm.*, coal.

Gun, *prep.*, without.

Gur, *v. part.*, that it is.

Gus, *prep.*, to (the).

Guth (**gutha**), *nm.*, a voice.

I, ise, *pers. pron.*, she, her, it.

Iad, iadsan, *pers. pron.*, they.

Iain, *nm.*, John.

Iar, west (an airde 'n-iar).

Iarr, *v.* ask, seek (**iarraidh**).

Iarunn, *nm.*, iron.

Iasg (**eisg**), *nm.*, a fish.

Iasgach, *vn.*, a fishing.

Im (**ime**), *nm.*, butter.

- longantas**, astonishment.
Innis, *v.*, tell, relate (*innseadh*).
Innte, in her (see *p. p. ann*).
Is, *v. emph.*, is.
Is, a *conj.*, and.
Ith, *v.* eat (*itheadh*).
- La, latha**, *nm.*, a day; *plur.*,
laithean.
Labhair, *v.*, speak (*labhairt*).
Lagh (*lagha*), *nm.*, law.
Laidir (*laidire* or *treasa*), *adj.*,
 strong.
Lair (*laire, larach*), *nf.*, a mare;
plur., *lاراichean*.
Lamh, *nf.*, a hand.
Laighe, *vn.*, lying down.
Laigse, *n.* faint.
Lar, *nm.*, the ground, floor.
Lathair, *prep.*, *ann an lathair*, in
 the presence of.
Le, leis, *prep.*, with.
Leabhar, *nm.*, a book.
pl., *leabhraichean*.
Leam, leat, etc. (see par. 185).
Lean, *v.*, follow, pursue (*lean-
 tuinn*).
Leir, gu leir, *adv.*, altogether,
 wholly.
Leisg, *adj.*, lazy.
Leoir, gu leoir, enough.
Leth, *nm.*, a half.
Leughadh, *n.* and *vn.*, a reading,
 reading.
Linne, *nf.*, a pool, pond; *pl.*,
linneachan.
Lion (*lin*), *nm.*, a net; *pl.*, *lin,
 liontan*.
Lionn or **leann**, *nm.*, *gen.*, *leanna*,
 beer.
Loch (*locha*), *nm.*, a loch, lake.
Long (*luinge*), *nf.*, a ship.
Luath (*luaithe*), *adj.*, swift.
Luch (*lucha, luchainn*), *nf.*, a
 mouse.
Lugha, less (see *beag*).
- Ma, conj.**, if, **ma fa**, if so.
Mac (*mic*), *nm.*, a son.
Mach, *adv.*, out.
- Maduinn** (*maidne*), *nf.*, morning.
Maide, *nm.*, a stick.
Maireach, am maireach, *adv.*,
 to-morrow.
Mairi, *nf.*, Mary.
Maith, *adj.*, good (see *math*).
Mall (*maille*), *adj.*, slow, easy
 going.
Mar, *adv.*, as, like as, **mar sin**,
 in the same manner.
Math (*fearr*), *adj.*, good.
Mathair (*mathar*), *nf.*, a mother.
Meadhon-la, *nm.*, mid-day.
Measg (*am measg*), *prep.*, among.
Mi, mise, *pers. pron.*, I.
Mi-fhein, *emph. pron.*, myself.
Mile *nm.*, a thousand.
Milis (*milse*) *adj.* sweet.
Min (*mine*), *adj.* smooth.
Ministeir, *nm.*, a minister.
Mionaidean, *nm.* minutes.
Miosa, *adj.*, worse; see **olc** and
dona.
Misd, misde, *comp. of olc*, worse.
Mna, mnatha, *gen. of bean*.
Mnathan, *pl. of bean*, a woman.
Mo, *poss. pron.*, my.
Modh, *nm.*, style.
Monadh, *nm.*, a mountain; a
 moor.
Mor (**mo, motha**), *adj.*, great,
 large.
Mor, *nf.*, Sally, Sarah.
Moran, *adj.* and *n.*, many, much.
Mu, *prep.*, about, around.
Muir, a' mhuir, *nf.*, a sea, the
 sea generally.
Muir, am muir, *nm.*, a sea, the
 sea, a wave.
Mullach, *nm.*, the top, summit.
Mur, *conj. part.*, if not.
- Na, conj.**, than.
Na, *pl. art.*, the.
Na, neg. imper. particle, do not;
 let not.
Na, the rel. pron., what, that,
 which.
'Na (*cont. for ann a*), in his, her,

- Nach**, *the rel. neg. pron.*, what not, who not, that not, etc.
Nach ? *inter. neg. part.*, is not ?
Nach, *irr. v.*, that it is not.
'N am, 'n an (*cont.*, for **ann am, ann an**), in their.
Na 'm, na 'n, *conj.*, if.
Nan, nam, *gen. pl. art.*, of the.
Naoi, *nu. adj.*, nine.
Neul (neoil), *nm.* a cloud.
Ni, *nm.*, a thing.
Nis, *adv.*, now.
No, *conj.*, or.
Nochd, an nochd, *adv.*, to-night.
'Nuair (an uair), *adv.*, when.
Nuas, a nuas, *adv.*, down—from above.

O, *prep.*, from.
Obair (oibre, oibreach), *nf.*, work; *pl.*, oibrichean, obraichean.
Ochd, *nu. adj.*, eight.
Og (oige), *adj.*, young.
Oglach, *nm.*, a youth.
Oidhche, *nf.*, night.
Oirre, *pp.*, on her.
Ol, *v.*, drink (**ag ol**).
Olc (miosa), *adj.*, bad, wicked.
Or (oir), *nm.*, gold; *pl.*, oir.
Oran, *nm.*, a song.
Ord (uird), a hammer; *pl.*, uird.
Orm, ort, orra, etc. (see par. 138).

Pairc, *nf.*, a park.
Peann (pinn, peanna), *nm.*, a pen; *pl.*, pinn, peannan.
Piob (pioba), *nf.*, (1) a tobacco pipe; (2) the bag-pipe.
Piuthar (peathar), *nf.*, a sister; *pl.*, peathraichean.
Poit (poite), *nf.*, a pot.
Port (puirt), *nm.*, a port, a harbour, a tune.
Pris (prise), *nf.*, a price.
Punnd, *nm.*, pound.

Rach, *irr. v.*, go (**a'dol**).
Radh, ag radh, *vn.*, saying.
Rainig, *irr. v.*, reached.
Ramh, *nm.*, an bar; *pl.*, raimh.

Raoir, an raoir, *adv.*, last night.
Rathad, *nm.*, a way, a road.
Re, *prep.*, during.
Reic, *v. and n.*, sell, selling.
Ri, ris, *prep.*, to.
Riamh (a riamh), *adv.*, ever, at any time before—used of past time only.
Rinn, *v.*, did make, did.
Rìgh, *mn.*, a king.
Ris, *pp.*, to him.
Ris, a ris, or rithisd, *adv.*, again.
Rium, riut, etc. (*p.p.* 404).
Robh, *depr. v.* was.
Roimh, *prep.*, before.
Ruadh (ruaidhe), *adj.*, red, reddish.
Rug, *irr. v.*, past of **boir**, caught; bore; gave birth.
Ruig, *irr. v.*, reach (**ruigsinn, ruigheachd**).
Ruith, *v. and n.*, run, running.

Saighdear (saighdeir), *nm.*, a soldier.
Salach (salaiche), *adj.*, dirty.
Sailte, *adj.*, salt, salted.
Samhach (samhaiche), *adj.*, quiet calm.
Sam-bith, ever, along with **co**, fear, etc.; **co sam-bith**, whoever; **fear sam-bith**, anyone.
Saor, *nm.*, wright, joiner; also *adj.*, free; cheap.
Seach, seachad air, *prep.*, past, by.
Seachd, *nu.*, *adj.*, seven.
Seachduin (seachduine), *nf.*, a week.
Sean(n), (sine), *adj.*, old.
Seas, *v.*, stand (**seasamh**).
Seasmhach, steadfast.
Seinn, *v. and n.*, sing, singing.
Seoladair, *nm.*, a sailor.
Seumas (Sheumais), *nm.*, James.
Sgian, *nf.*, a knife (see *irreg. declen.*).
Sgillinn (sgillinne), *nf.*, a penny; **sgillinn Shasunnach**, an English penny, *i.e.*, a shilling.

- Sgine**, *gen. of sgian*.
Sgith (sgithe), *adj.*, tired, fatigued
Sgoil, *nf.*, a school.
Sibh, *sibhse, pro.*, you.
Sin, *dem. pron.*, that, those.
Sine, *com. adj.*, older.
Sinn, *pro.*, we, us.
Sios, *adv.*, down—resting.
Sios, a sios, *adv.*, down, downwards; motion to.
Slan leibh, leat, farewell.
Slat (slaite), *nf.*, a rod; *pl.*, **slatan**
Sliabh, *nm*, a moor.
Sluagh, *nm*, people.
Sloc (sluic), *nm.*, or *nf.*, a pit, a hole.
Snamh, *v. and n.*, swim, swimming.
So, *dem. pron.*, this, those.
Sobhrach, *nf.*, a primrose; *pl.*, **sobhraichean**.
Sporan, *nm.*, purse.
Spag, spog (spaige, spoige), *nf.*, a paw.
Sraid (sraide), *nf.*, a street.
Sruth, *nm.*, a stream.
Stabull, *nm.*, a stable.
Steach, *adv.*, in, inwards—expressing motion.
Stigh, a stigh, *adv.*, in, inside—rest in.
Suas, *adv.*, up, upwards.
Sud (siod), *yon*, that.
Suidhe, *n. and vn.*, sitting.
Suil (sula), *nf.*, an eye.
Taillear (tailleir), *nm.*, a tailor.
Taobh, *nm.*, a side.
Tapaidh, *adj.*, clever.
Tarbh, *nm.*, a bull.
Tasdan, *nf.*, a shilling.
Teich, *v.*, flee, escape (**teich, teicheadh**).
Teine, *nm.*, a fire; *pl.*, **teintean, teineachan**.
Thachras, *v.*, will happen, *from tachair*.
Tha, *v.*, is, am, art, are.
Thainig, *v.*, came, *past of thig*.
Thairis, thairis air, *prep.*, over, across.
Thall, *adv.*, over, beyond—rest in.
Thar, *prep.*, across, over.
Theab, *defect. v.*, had almost, had nearly.
Theid, *v.*, will go, *fut. of rach*.
Thig, *irr. v.*, come (**tighinn, teachd**).
Thu, thusa, *pers. pron.*, thou, thee
Thubhairt, *v.*, said, *past of abair*.
Thu-fhein, *pers. pron.*, thyself.
Thug, *v.*, gave, *past of thoir*.
Tigh, *nm.*, a house, a home.
Tighinn, *vn.*, coming.
Tilg, *v.*, throw (**tilgeil**).
Till, *v.*, return, turn (**tilleadh**).
Tinn (tinne), *adj.*, sick.
Tir (tire), *nf.*, land.
Tog, *v.*, lift, raise (**togail**).
Togail (togalach), *nf.*, a building; *pl.*, **togalaichean**.
Toilichte, *adj.*, pleased, satisfied.
Toir, *irr. v.*, give (page 139).
Toll (tuill), *nm.*, a hole.
Traigh (traghad), *nf.*, a sea-shore, a sandy beach
Trath (traithe), *adj. and adv.*, early, just now.
Treas, *nu. adj.*, third.
Treasa, treise, *compar. of laidir*.
Treig, *v.* forsake (**treigsinn**).
Tri, *nu. adj.*, three.
Treun, *adj.*, brave, strong.
Trom (truime), *adj.*, heavy.
Tromham, tromhad, etc. (see *p. p.*—**troimh**).
Truas, *nm.*, pity.
Trus, *v.*, gather, collect (**trusadh**).
Tu, tusa, *pers. pron.*, thou, thee.
Tuath, north (**an airde tuath**, the north).
Tuathanach, *nm.*, a farmer.
Tuig, *v.*, understand (**tuigsinn**).
Tuit, *v.*, fall.
Uair, *nf.*, an hour, time.
Uairean, *pl. of uair*.
Uaireadair, *nm.*, a timepiece, a watch.

Uam, uat, etc. (see par. 122).
Uan, *nm.*, a lamb.
Ud, *dem. pron.*, yon, yonder.
Uile, *indef. pron.*, all, every.
Uillt, see **allt**.
Uinneag, *nf.*, a window.
Uird, *gen. and pl. of ord*

Uiridh, an uiridh, *adv.*, last year.
Uisge, *nm.*, water, rain; *pl.*,
uisgeachan.
Ur, *poss. pron.*, your.
Ur (uire), *adj.*, new, fresh.
Urrainn, *v.*, can; **is urrainn**
domh, I can.

ENGLISH-GAELIC VOCABULARY.

About, *prep.*, mu, mu thimchioll.
Across, *prep.*, thar, thairis air.
Acquainted, *adj.*, eolach.
Afraid, fear, *n.* eagal (par. 136).
After, *prep.*, an déidh.
Afternoon, *nm.*, feasgar.
Again, *adv.*, a ris (rithisd).
Against, *prep.*, an aghaidh.
All, *indef. pron.*, na h-uile, iad uile.
Alone, *n. m.*, aonar (par. 383).
Already, *adv.*, cheana; mar tha (literally, **as it is**).
Also, *adv.*, cuideachd, mar an ceudna.
Among, *prep.*, am measg.
Anger, *nm.*, fearg.
And, *conj.*, agus.
Another, eile, fear eile; **one another**, càch-a-chéile.
Any, sam-bith, air-bith; **any money**, airgiod sam-bith.
Are, *v.*, tha, bheil, is.
Arrive (at), *v.*, ruig (see irreg. verbs).
Ask, *v.*, iarr (ag iarraidh).
Asleep (sleeping), a' cadal; **he is asleep**, tha e 'na chadal.
Astonishment, *nm.*, iongantas.
At, *prep.*, aig.
Axe, *nf.*, tuagh (tuaigne).
Bad, *adj.*, olc, dona.
Bag, *nf.*, maileid.
Bagpipe, *nm.*, a' phìob (mhór).
Bank, *nf.*, bruach.

Bè, *v.*, bi, **being** (bhi).
Bed, *nf.*, leabaidh (*gen.*, leapa).
Beer, *nm.*, lionn.
Before, *adv.*, roimhe.
Behind, *adv. and prep.*, an deidh, air cùlaobh.
Belong (see idiom, par. 413).
Better, *adj.*, fearr, na's fearr.
Between, *prep.*, eadar.
Big, *adj.*, mór (mo).
Bird, *nm.*, eun, *pl.*, eòin.
Black, *adj.*, dubh.
Blue, *adj.*, gorm.
Boat, *nm.*, bàta.
Book, *nm.*, leabhar.
Boy, *nm.*, balach, gille.
Branch, *nf.*, geug.
Brave, *adj.*, treun.
Bread, *nm.*, aran.
Break, *v.*, brist.
Briar, *nf.*, dreas.
Bridge, *nf.*, drochaid.
Bright, *adj.*, soilleir.
Broken, *v. adj.*, briste.
Brother, *nm.*, bràthair.
Brought, *v.*, thug.
Brown, *adj.*, donn.
Build, *v.*, tog.
Bull, *nm.*, tarbh.
But, *conj.*, ach.
Butter, *nm.*, ìm.
Buy, bought, *v.*, ceannaich.
Calf, *nm.*, laogh.
Calved, *v.*, **the cow calved**, rug a' bhó (laogh).

Came, *v.*, thàinig.
Can, *defect. v.*, is urrainn (domh, etc.)
Cannot, *defect. v.*, cha'n urrainn (domh, etc.).
Cap, *nm.*, or *f.*, boineid.
Carriage, *nf.*, carbad.
Cat, *nm.*, cat.
Catch, *v.*, glac, beir air.
Caught, *v.*, rug (e, i, etc.), air.
Certain, certainly, cinnteach.
Chair, *nf.*, cathair (cathrach).
Clever, *adj.*, tapaidh.
Clock, *nm.*, uaireadair; **o'clock**, uairean; *e.g.*, **eight o'clock**, ochd uairean.
Cloud, *nm.*, neul (neoil).
Coal, *nm.*, gual.
Coat, *nm.*, còta.
Cold, *adj.*, fuar.
Collie, *nm.*, cu-chaorach.
Come, *v.*, thig; **coming**, *vn.*, a' tighinn).
Corn, *nm.*, arbhar.
Country, *nf.*, duthaich, tìr; **in the country**, air an duthaich.

Day, *nm.*, là, latha.
Death, bàs.
Deer, *nm.*, fiadh; *pl.*, féidh.
Dirk, *nf.*, biodag.
Dirty, *adj.*, salach.
Do, *v. irreg.*, dean (*past*, rinn).
Dog, *nm.*, cù; *pl.*, coin.
Door, *nm.*, doras.
Down, *adv.*, sìos, a sìos.
Drink, *v.*, òl.
Drink, *nf.*, deoch (*gen.* dibhe).
During, *prep.*, ré, troimh.

Ear, *nf.*, cluas; *pl.*, cluasan.
Eat, *v.*, ith (itheadh).
Early, *adv.*, moch.
Edinburgh, Duneideann.
Enough, *adv.*, gu leòir.
Evening, *nm.*, feasgar.
Ever, *adv.*, **in the past**—riamh; **in the future**—chaidh.
Every, *adj.*, a h-uile, gach.

Everyone (*collectively*), na h-uile; (*distributively*), a h-uile neach, gach neach, a h-uile duine, etc.
Eye, *nf.*, sùil; *pl.* sùilean.

Face, *nf.*, aghaidh, aodann (*nm.*); **in face of**, an aghaidh.
Faithful, *adj.*, dìleas.
Fall, *v.*, tuit.
Family, *nm.*, teaghlach.
Farmer, *nm.*, tuathanach.
Father, *nm.*, athair.
Fear, *nm.*, eagal (par. 136).
Fever, *nm.*, fiabhras.
Field, *nm.*, achadh.
Fierce, *adj.*, borb.
Find, *v. irr.*, faigh.
Fine, *adj.*, maith (math), gasda.
Fire, *nm.*, teine.
Fish, *nm.*, iasg; *gen.*, éisg.
Fish, *v.*, iasgaich.
Fisherman, *nm.*, iasgair.
Fishing, *n.* and *vn.*, iasgach; **going a-fishing**, a' dol a dh'iasgach.
Five, *nu. adj.*, cóig.
Floor, *nm.*, làr, urlar.
Follow, *v.*, lean (a' leantuinn).
Foot, *nf.*, cas (coise).
Found, *v. irr.*, fhuair.
Friend, *nm.*, caraaid; *pl.*, càir-dean.
From, *prep.*, bho, o.
Front (**in front of**), *prep.* and *adv.*, roimhe, air beulaobh.
Full, *adj.*, làn.

Gaelic, *nf.* Gaidhlig.
Garden, *nm.*, gàrradh.
Gathering, *vn.*, a' trusadh.
Give, *v.*, thug.
Get, *v. irr.*, faigh.
Girl, *nf.*, caileag (caileige); *pl.*, caileagan.
Give, *v. irr.*, tabhair, thoir (*fut.* bheir).
Glasgow, Glascho.
Glass, *nf.*, gloine.
Glen, *nm.*, gleann (*gen.*, glinne).
Go, *v.*, rach, imich.

- Going**, *vn.*, a' dol.
Gold, *nm.*, òr.
Good, *adj.*, maith (math).
Good-bye, beannachd leibh (leat)
Good-night, oidhche mhath leibh (leat).
Got, *v.*, fhuair.
Grey, *adj.*, glas.
Great, *adj.*, mor (mo).
Grow, *v.* fas.
Hammer, *nm.*, òrd.
Hand, *nf.*, làmh; *pl.*, làmhan.
Happy, *adj.*, sona.
Harbour, *nm.*, port.
Hair, *nm.*, falt (fuilt).
Hat, *nf.*, ad (*gen.*, aide).
Have, *v.*, tha—aig; tha cu aig an duine, **the man has a dog** (par. 111-3).
He, *pers. pron.*, e; *emph.*, esan.
Head, *nm.*, ceann.
Hear, *v. irr.*, cluinn (a' cluinntinn)
Heard, *v. irr.*, chuala.
Heavy, *adj.*, trom.
Hen, *nf.*, cearc (*gen.*, circe).
Her, *pron.* i; *emph.* ise; *poss.* a.
Here, *adv.*, an so.
Hero, *nm.*, laoch, curaidh.
Hgh, *adj.*, àrd; **highest**, as airde.
Mill, *nm.*, cnoc, monadh; *pl.*, cnuic.
Himself, *pers. pron.*, e-fhéin.
His, *poss. pron.*, a.—aspirates its noun.
Hit, *v.*, buail.
Hole, *nm.*, toll; *pl.*, tuill.
Home, *nf.*, dachaidh; **at home**, aig an tigh.
Horn, *nf.*, adharc.
Horse, *nm.*, each; *pl.*, eich.
Hour, *nf.*, uair; *pl.*, uairean.
House, *nm.*, tigh, taigh.
How? *inter. adv.*, ciamar?
How many? cia meud? cia lion?
Hunger, *nm.*, acras (par. 136).
I, *pers. pron.*, mi; *emph.*, mise.
If, *conj.*, ma.
- If not**, mur.
Immediately, *adv.*, air ball.
In, into, *prep.*, ann an, anns.
In, *adv.*, a stigh.
Is? Am bheil? An e? etc.
Is, tha, bheil, is.
- James**, *nm.*, Seumas.
John, *nm.*, Iain.
Joiner, *nm.*, saor.
Just now, *adv.*, an trath so.
- Kick**, *v.*, breab (a' breabadh).
King, *nm.*, rìgh; *pl.*, rìghrean.
Knife, *nf.*, sgian.
Know, *v.*, **I know**, tha fhios (fios) agam; **I do not know**, cha'n eil fhios agam, aithne, etc. (par. 127-30).
- Lad**, *nm.*, gille; *pl.*, gillean.
Lamb, *nm.*, uan; *pl.*, uain.
Lame, *adj.*, crùbach.
Land, *nf.*, tìr.
Large, *adj.*, mór.
Last (night), *adv.*, an raoir.
Last (year), *adv.*, an uraidh.
Late, *adv.*, an-moch.
Lazy, *adj.*, leisg.
Leave, *v.*, fàg.
Lift, *v.*, tog.
Little, *adj.*, beag.
Little, *adj. nm.*, beagan.
Loch, *nm.*, loch.
Long, *adj.*, fada.
Lost, *v. adj.*, caillte.
Love, *nm.*, gradh.
- Make**, *v. irr.*, dean.
Malcolm, *nm.*, Calum.
Man, *nm.*, fear, duine; *pl.*, fir, daoine.
Many, *adj.*, (many a), iomadh.
Many, *adj. n.*, móran.
May, *v.* faod.
Mary, *nf.*, Màiri.
Mason, *nm.*, clachair.
Meal, *nf.*, min.
Middle, *nm.*, meadhon; **in the middle**, anns a' mheadhon.
Midnight, meadhon-oidhche.

Milk, *nm.*, bainne.
Minute, *nf.*, mionaid.
Mine (see *poss. prons.*, par. 413).
Mist, *nm.*, ceò.
Month, *nm.*, mìos.
Moon, *nf.*, gealach.
Moor, *nm.*, raon, monadh, sliabh.
More, na's mò.
Morning, *nf.*, maduinn (maidne).
Mother, *nf.*, màthair.
Mountain, *nf.*, beinn ; *pl.*, beanntan.
Mouse, *nf.*, luch (*gen.*, luchainn)
Must, feumaidh, is eudar ; **I must** feumaidh mi, is eudar dhomh.
My, *poss. pron.*, mo.
Myself, *pers. pron.*, mi-fhéin.
Near, *adj.*, fagus, faisg.
Nearly (see defective verbs).
Neat, *adj.*, grinn, sgiobalta ; **she is neater than**, tha i na's grinne na, etc.
Need, *nm.*, feum ; tha feum agam air bainne, **I need milk**, *lit.*, there is need at me on (with) milk.
Nest, *nm.*, and *f.*, nead.
Net, *nm.*, lìon (lìn).
New, *adj.*, ùr.
Never, *adv.* (say "not ever"), **I never saw him**, cha'n fhaca mi riamh e.
Nice, *adj.*, gasda, laghach.
Night, *nf.*, oidhche ; **at night**, am beul na h-oidhche (**at dusk**).
Nine, *adj.*, naoi.
No, *adv.*, cha'n eil, cha'n e, cha.
None (say **not one**), par. 476.
Noise, *nm.* and *f.*, fuaim.
Now, *adv.*, a nis, an dràsda.
Nut, *nf.*, cnò ; *pl.*, cnothan.
Oar, *nm.*, ràmh ; *pl.*, ràimh.
O'clock (hour), uair, uairean.
Off (away), *adv.*, air falbh.
Off (e.g., **put off you**), dhìot (see *p. p.*).
Old, *adj.*, aosda, sean.
Older, eldest, sine.

On, *prep.*, air.
One, *nu. adj.*, aon.
One (any one), *indef. pron.*, fear-sam-bith.
One (one of) aon de, etc.
Open, *v.*, fosgail (fosgladh).
Open, *v., adj.*, fosgailte.
Other, *adj.*, eile ; **other friends**, càirdean eile.
Ought, *v.*, is coir.
Our, *poss. pron.*, ar.
Out, *adv.* (**rest in**), a muigh.
Out, *adv.* (**motion towards**), a mach.
Out of (see *prep. pron.* par. 404).
Over (towards one), *adv.*, a nall. (away from), a null.
Over (me), *prep.*, thairis orm = tharam.
Own, fein, fhein.
Ox, *nm.*, damh (daimh).
Park, *nf.*, pàirc.
Pay, *v.*, pàigh or pàidh (paidheadh).
Pen, *nm.*, peann (*gen.*, pinn or peanna).
Penny, *nf.*, sgillinn, peighinn.
Pen, sheep-pen, fang.
Pity, *nm.*, truas.
Pipe, *nf.*, pìob.
Pit, *nm.* or *f.*, sloc.
Place, *nm.*, àite.
Poet, *nm.*, bàrd.
Poor, *adj.*, bochd.
Price, *nf.*, prìs.
Primrose, *nf.*, sobhrach.
Put, *v.*, cuir.
Present, *adv.*, an lathair.
Presently, *adv.*, an drasd.
Pretty, *adj.*, boidheach (boidhche).
Purse, *nm.*, sporan.
Pound, *nm.*, punnd.
Quick, *adj.*, luath, clis ; (*adv.*, gu luath).
Quiet, *adj.*, samhach, ciùin.
Quietly, *adv.*, gu samhach, gu ciùin.

- Rain**, *nm.*, nisge.
Reach, *irreg. v.*, ruig.
Read, *v.* leugh.
Ready, *adj.*, deas.
Reap, *v.*, buain.
Reaping, *n.* and *vn.*, buain.
Rich, *adj.*, beartach.
Rise, *v.*, éirich.
River, *nf.*, abhainn (aibhne).
Rod, *nf.*, slat; *pl.*, slatan.
Run, *ran*, *v.* ruith.

Sad, *adj.*, bronach.
Said, *irr. v.*, thubhairt.
Sailor, *nm.*, seoladair.
Salt, *salted*, *adj.*, saillte.
Say, *irr. v.*, abair.
Saying, *ag radh.*
Saw, *v.*, chunnaic.
Scotland, Alba, Albainn.
Scotsman, *nm.*, Albannach.
School, *nf.*, sgoil.
Score, *nu. adj.*, fichead.
Sea, *nm.* or *f.*, muir.
Second, *nu. adj.*, dara.
See, *v. irr.*, faic.
Sell, *v.*, reic (a' reic).
Seed, *nm.*, siol (sil).
Sharp, *adj.*, geur.
Sheep, *nf.*, caora; *pl.*, caoraich.
Shepherd, *nm.*, clobair.
Shilling, *nf.*, tasdan.
Ship, *nf.*, long.
Shoe, *nf.*, bròg; *pl.*, brògan.
Shore, *nm.*, cladach; *f.*, tràigh (tràghad).
Shower, *nf.*, fras (froise).
Shut, *v.*, druid, dùin.
Shut, *v. adj.*, druidte, dùinte.
Sick, *adj.*, tinn.
Side, *nm.*, taobh.
Sing, *v.*, seinn (a' seinn).
Sister, *nf.*, piuthar.
Sit, *v.*, suidh (suidhe).
Sleep, *nm.*, cadal.
Sleep, *v.*, caidil (a' cadal).
Slow, *adj.*, mall.
Small, *adj.*, beag, caol.
Snow, *nm.*, sneachd.
Soldier, *nm.*, saighdear.

Someone, *indf. pron.*, cuid-eiginn.
Some, cuid.
Song, *nm.*, òran.
Son, *nm.*, mac; *pl.*, mic.
Soon, *adv.*, luath.
Sound, *nm.* and *f.*, fuaim.
Sowing (seed), *v.*, a' cur (sil).
Speak, *v.*, labhair, bruidhinn.
Stable, *nm.*, stàbull.
Stand, *v.*, seas (seasamh).
Still, *adj.*, samhach.
Stick, *nm.*, maide.
Stone, *nf.*, clach (cloiche); *pl.*, clachan.
Stream, *nm.*, sruth.
Strike, *v.*, buail.
Strong, *adj.*, laidir.
Sun, *nf.*, grian (*gen.*, gréine).
Sure, *adj.*, cinnteach.
Sweet (in taste), *adj.*, milis.
Sweet (music), *adj.*, binn, ceòl-mhor.
Sweetness, *nf.*, mìlsead, mìlseachd.
Swift, *adj.*, luath.

Table, *nm.*, bòrd.
Tailor, *nm.*, taillear.
Tall, *adj.*, àrd.
Tell, *v.*, innis (ag innseadh).
Tell (say to), *v.*, abair ri or ris.
Ten, *nu. adj.*, deich.
Terrier, *nf.*, abhag.
Than, *conj.*, na.
Thank you, gu'n robh math agaibh (agad).
That those, *dem. pron.*, sin.
That, *rel. pron.*, a.
That, *conj.*, gu'n (m).
Their, *poss pron.*, an (am).
Then, *adv.*, an sin.
There, *adv.*, ann, an sud (pars 61-144).
This, *dem. pron.*, so.
Though, *conj.*, ged (a).
Throw, *v.*, tilg.
Tied, *adj.*, ceangailte.
Tired, *adj.*, sgèth.
To, *prep.*, do, ri, ris.
To-day, *adv.*, an diugh.

- Told**, *v.*, dh'innis mi (I told).
To-morrow, *adv.*, am màireach; **the day after to-morrow**, an earar.
To-night, *adv.*, an nochd.
Too, *adv.* (of deg.), ro.
Too (also), cuideachd, mar an ceudna.
Took, *v.*, thug.
Tooth, *nf.*, fiacail (fiacra).
Top, *nm.*, barr, mullach.
Towards, *prep.*, gu, thun, a dh' ionnsuidh.
Town, *nm.*, baile.
Train, carbad-iaruinn.
Tree, *nf.*, craobh.
Trout, *nm.*, breac (*gen.*, bric).
Truthful (true), fìor, fìrinneach.
Twig, *nf.*, geug; *nm.*, meangan or meanglan.

Under, *prep.*, fo.
Until, *adv.* and *prep.*, gus; gus a' chrioch, **until the end**.
Up, *adv.* (**motion towards**), suas, a suas.
Up, *adv.* (**rest in**), shuas.
Us, sinn, sinne.

Very, *adv.*, glé; very big, glé mhór
Voice, *nm.*, guth (gutha).

Wait, *v.*, fan (a' fantuinn).
Waken, *v.*, dùisg (a' dùsgadh).
Wall, *nm.*, balla; *pl.*, ballachan.
Want (idiom, par. 121-3).
Warm, *adj.*, blàth.
Was, were, *v.*, bha, robh.
Watch, *nm.*, uaireadair.
Water, *nm.*, uisge.
Wealthy, *adj.*, beartach.
Week, *nf.*, seachdain.
Welcome, *nf.*, failte, faoilte.

Well, *adv.*, gu math.
Went, *v.*, chaidh.
Wet, *adj.*, fliuch.
What? *inter.*, ciod? dé?
What, *rel. pron.*, na.
When? *inter.*, cuin, c'uin?
When, *adv.*, nuair, an uair.
Where? *inter.*, c'àite?
Where, *adv.*, far.
Which, *rel.*, a.
Which (of them)? có aca?
White, *adj.*, geal, bàn.
Who? *inter.*, có?
Whoever, *indef. pron.*, co-air-bith.
Whose? *inter.*, có leis?
Why? *inter.*, c'arson?
Wife, *nf.*, bean (see *irreg. nouns*).
Wind, *nf.*, gaoth.
Window, *nf.*, uinneag; *pl.*, uinneagan.
Wine, fion.
Wise, *adj.*, glic.
Wish, desire, *n.* miann, iarrtas.
With, *prep.*, le, leis.
Woman, *nf.*, bean; *pl.*, mnathan (see *irreg. nouns*).
Wood, *nf.*, coille, fiodh.
Work, *nf.*, obair (*gen.*, oibre, oibreach).
Wrong, *adj.*, ceàrr, mìcheart.
Worse, misd (e), miosa, *comp.* of olc.

Year, *nf.*, bliadhna; *pl.*, bliadh-nachan.
Yesterday, *adv.*, an dé.
Yet, *adv.*, fathast.
Yonder, *adv.*, an sud.
Young, *adj.*, òg.
Your, *poss. pron.*, bhur, ur, do.
Yourself, *poss. pron.*, thu-fhéin.
Youth, *nm.*, oiglach, *pl.*, òigridh.

Handy for the Waistcoat Pocket.

Coinneamh Ghaidhlig.

A Gaelic Meeting

A number of Phrases and Expressions grouped together for the first time. They will be useful as an aid in the conducting of routine business at all Gaelic Meetings.

Price 3d, post free 4d.

This, which is the first such list published in Gaelic, has been compiled in the hope that it may be the means of introducing the more general use of the Gaelic language by the Gael at public meetings, especially in Gaeldom, and at meetings of Gaelic Societies, where the conducting of business in English is so sadly out of place.

ALASDAIR MAC LABHRUINN AGUS A MHAIC,
360 SRAID EARRAGHAIDHEAL,
GLASCHO.

Coinneamh Ghaidhlig. A Gaelic Meeting, a small booklet containing expressions for use at meetings; debates; phrases for moving and seconding resolutions, and many other useful phrases, in Gaelic, 3d (6 cents), postage $\frac{1}{4}$ d.



It is an excellent little booklet and well worth its price (3d). Those who are in the habit of conducting routine business in Gaelic will find it extremely useful. It will save them from using such expressions as: "Tha mi 'gluasad" for "I move a motion," and "mionaidean," for minutes, etc. We cordially recommend this booklet.—"An Deo Gréine."

I may say that some years ago a branch of An Comunn was established in our parish. At the very outset of our career we were confronted with such words as president, secretary, treasurer, committee, syllabus, etc.—words that do not enter into our work-a-day conversation, but belong strictly to the select field of public affairs. Despite this difficulty, we determined to carry on the business of An Comunn, as far as possible, in the mother tongue; we felt that an organisation founded with the sole object of propagating and advancing the Gaelic language could not with consistency afford to play second fiddle to the mushroom English. In our dilemma we cast round to find some means of meeting the situation; it was then we discovered that there is published already a little handbook of Gaelic words and phrases entirely suited to our needs. The contents of this booklet would be learned by any intelligent Highlander in a very short time, and, having mastered it, he could have no difficulty in discussing public affairs with the utmost facility in his native tongue. It might be urged that this is altogether an exceptional instance, but the fact remains that English words waylay us at every turn of the conversational road.—D.B.F. in "An Deo Gréine."

A GOOD BOOK FOR THE LEARNER

UIRSGEULAN GHAIÐHLIG.

FIONN ANN AN TIGH A' BHLAIR BHUIDHE

GUN CHOMAS SUIDHE NO EIRIGH

FINGAL IN THE HOUSE OF THE BLAR BUIDHE

WITHOUT THE POWER OF SITTING DOWN OR RISING UP.

PRICE 3d. POSTAGE 1d. EXTRA

The Gaelic original has been well edited and revised, and it and the English translation are so arranged into short paragraphs side by side on opposite pages that there will be no difficulty in following the construction of the Gaelic grammar. It is an ideal home teacher—easy, entertaining and instructive. The student into whose hands it gets cannot help learning a few words at the very first reading and the words first learnt will catch his eye in other positions and on other pages. He will examine the new sentences in which these few words appear and will thereby familiarise himself with further words and new sentences. Rapid progress is sure to be made, and the English translation is always at hand to correct and avoid any misconception being put on the Gaelic Text.

Fingal appears in a large number of the Gaelic Heroic Ballads, as leader of the whole band of Heroes to whom the name of Fians or Fingalians is given. They followed the chase wherever venison was to be found, both in Scotland and in Ireland. The tales told of them are both numerous and entertaining. Some tell of deep and sad sorrow; some refer to feats of strength and activity, and in all of them Fingal figures as a man of great wisdom and sagacity. There are several stories told of Fingal and his band; this being one of them, telling how he was in the House of the Blar-Buidhe without the power of rising up or of sitting down.

This useful little booklet is based upon a tale written down by the late Mr. Donald C. Macpherson, of the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, the reciter being Mr. Macpherson's grandmother. It was contributed by J. F. Campbell, of Islay, to the "Revue Celtica" in 1870, and was afterwards reprinted in the "Gael" of January, 1875. The present edition has been thoroughly revised, the Gaelic text having an English translation upon the opposite page. The text is, on the whole, very satisfactory, and the translation seems thoroughly reliable. Variants of the tale have been published in Macdougall's "Folk and Hero Tales," J. G. Campbell's volume "The Fians," and elsewhere. The present version seems a good one, and is couched in the strong direct idiomatic language of the people. It may be added that the translation following, as it does, the idiom of the original should be very helpful to elementary students of the language, for whom the publication is in all respects admirably suited.—"Northern Chronicle."

The student of Gaelic will find an entertaining aid to progress in his studies in a Fingal tale just published by Messrs. Alexander MacLaren & Son, Argyle Street, Glasgow. It is entitled "Fingal in the House of Blar Buidhe," and recounts the adventures of the son of Cumhal in the house of a giant whose staple diet was wild boars and the flesh of men. The Gaelic and English versions are given on alternate pages, an arrangement which lends itself admirably to the purposes of a home teacher.—"The Evening Times."

The Clachan Collection

FOUR of the BEST GAELIC SONGS

Gaelic Words Edited by "Fionn"

Melodies arranged by "Fionn" and Malcolm Macfarlane

Pianoforte Accompaniments arranged by C. R. Baptie

Price, 1/6 net each. The set, 6/-

Postage on one song if folded in half for envelope, 1d extra;

Neil MacLeod's Two Best Songs—

(1) "FAR AN ROBH MI'N RAOIR."

(2) "AN GLEANN 'SAN ROBH MI OG."

These two songs are now ready. It is generally conceded that they show Neil MacLeod at his best. They are great favourites at "The Mod" and all Gaelic and Clan Concerts. The melodies and pianoforte accompaniments are by the best composers.

Perhaps the most popular of his songs is that delightful one, "An gleann 'san robh mi og."

'N uair a philleas ruinn an samhradh,
Bidh gach doire's crann fo chroic;
Na h-eoin air bharr nam meanglan
Deanamh caitheim bhinn le'n ceol;
A chlann bheag a'ruith le fonn
Mu gach tom a'buain nan ros—
B'e mo mhian a' bhi 's an am sin
Ann a'ghleann 'san robh mi og.

The haunting refrain of this hymn of the exiled Gael has rung in the ears of many a Highland exile, from the prairies of Canada to "where the dawn comes up like thunder out of China 'cross the bay." It is true poetry of the heart, and this immortal poem at once presents a vivid picture of the glen and its life, and expresses the yearning love of his native Highlands which possesses the heart of every Gael.

In "An Gleann 'san robh mi og" (My Bonnie Native Glen), he gives us a pleasing picture of the social life in a Highland glen in his happy boyhood days; then we have another picture where with pathos, feeling and beauty of expression and sentiment the bard sings of "the change 'twixt now and then." and in haunting strains laments the desolated land and banished people.

Duncan Ban Macintyre's Popular Song—

(3) "CEAD DEIREANNACH NAM BEANN."

Ben Dorain seems to have been Duncan Ban's sacred mountain. He not only sang its praises and declared its beauty in the varied and various rhythms peculiar to Gaelic Poetry, but when the aged poet, after a residence of some years in Edinburgh, visited the Highlands in 1802 to bid a last "Farewell to the Bens," he climbed the Celtic Pisgah, and from its summit gazed on the scenes of his younger and happier days, and poured out his sorrowing soul in a poem worthy of the bard and worthy of the occasion. The aged bard, with hoary locks, was in his seventy-eighth year, and we need not wonder that his soul was sad as he gazed on the scenes of his former days. The friends of his youth were gone for ever—even the hills itself was changed. Its proud sights were gone! The troops of wild deer and graceful does had given place to sheep, and the poet marked the changes and sorrow filled his soul. The very title of the song is full of sadness—"Cead deireannach nam Beann"—The Last Farewell to the Bens. Almost every Gael is familiar with its opening lines:—

Bha mi'n de 'm Beinn Dorain,
'S na coir cha robh mi aineolach.

Another of the Popular Songs of To-Day—

(4) "BU CHAOMH LEAM 'BHI MIREADH."

This sweet little song formed one of Miss A. C. Whyte's Mod Prize Songs of 1907. It is a popular pastoral melody and was taken down by her from the singing of a Poglewe lady. It makes a valuable addition to a very programme.

